



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

To be returned

MAR - 21957



XL 70.35 [Cha]



CHARACTERISTICS.

VOLUME II.

An Inquiry concerning VIRTUE and MERIT.

The MORALISTS ; a Philosophical Rhapsody.



Printed in the Year M. DCC. XXIII.

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

PHILOSOPHY DEPARTMENT

PHILOSOPHY 201

PHILOSOPHY 201

PHILOSOPHY 201

TREATISE IV.
VIZ.
AN
INQUIRY
CONCERNING
Virtue, *or* Merit.

Formerly Printed from an Imperfect Copy :
Now Corrected, and Publish'd intire.

— *Amoto quæramus seria ludo.*

Hor. Sat. I.

Printed first in the Year M,DC,XC,IX.

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

PHYSICS DEPARTMENT

CHICAGO, ILL. 60637

TO THE PHYSICS DEPARTMENT

FROM THE PHYSICS DEPARTMENT

DATE

RE

BY

1

2

3

4

5

6

7

8

9



A N
INQUIRY, &c.

BOOK I.

PART I.

SECT. I.

RELIGION and VIRTUE *Occasion of this IN-*
 appear in many respects so near-
 ly related, that they are general-
 ly presum'd inseparable Compa-
 nions. And so willing we are to believe
 Vol. 2. A 3 well

Book I. well of their *Union*, that we hardly allow it just to speak, or even think of 'em a-part. It may however be question'd, whether the Practice of the World, in this respect, be answerable to our Speculation. 'Tis certain that we sometimes meet with Instances which seem to make against this general Supposition. We have known People, who having the Appearance of great Zeal in *Religion*, have yet wanted even the common Affections of *Humanity*, and shewn themselves extremely degenerate and corrupt. Others, again, who have paid little regard to Religion, and been consider'd as mere ATHEISTS, have yet been observ'd to practise the Rules of *Morality*, and act in many Cases with such good Meaning and Affection towards Mankind, as might seem to force an Acknowledgment of their being *virtuous*. And, in general, we find mere moral Principles of such weight, that in our dealings with Men, we are seldom satisfy'd by the fullest Assurance given us of their Zeal in Religion, till we hear something further of their Character. If we are told, a Man is religious; we still ask, "What are his Morals?" But if we hear at first that he has honest moral Principles, and is a Man of natural Justice and good Temper, we seldom think of the other Question, "Whether he be *religious* and *devout*?"

Occasion of
this IN-
QUIRY.

THIS has given occasion to enquire,
 “ What *Honesty* or V I R T U E is, consi-
 “ der’d by it-self; and in what manner it
 “ is influenc’d by Religion: How far
 “ Religion necessarily implies *Virtue*; and
 “ whether it be a true Saying, *That it is*
 “ *impossible for an Atheist to be virtuous,*
 “ *or share any real degree of Honesty, or*
 “ MERIT.”

AND here it cannot justly be wonder’d
 at, if the *Method* of explaining Things
 shou’d appear somewhat unusual; since
 the *Subject-Matter* has been so little exa-
 min’d, and is of so nice and dangerous
 Speculation. For so much is the reli-
 gious part of Mankind alarm’d by the
 Freedom of some late Pens; and so great
 a Jealousy is rais’d every-where on this
 Account; that whatever an Author may
 suggest in favour of *Religion*, he will gain
 little Credit in the Cause, if he allows the
 least Advantage to any other Principle.
 On the other side, the Men of Wit and
 Raillery, whose pleasantest Entertainment
 is in the exposing the weak sides of Re-
 ligion, are so desperately afraid of being
 drawn into any serious Thoughts of it,
 that they look upon a Man as guilty of
 foul Play, who assumes the air of a *Free*
Writer, and at the same time preserves any
 regard for the Principles of Natural Re-
 ligion.

Book I. *ligion.* They are apt to give as little
 Occasion of *to think as ill of the Morals of their An-*
 this IN- *tagonists, as their Antagonists can possi-*
 QUIRY. *bly think of theirs. Neither of 'em, it*
seems, will allow the least Advantage to
the other. 'Tis as hard to persuade one
fort, that there is any Virtue in Religion,
as the other, that there is any Virtue out
of the Verge of their particular Commu-
nity. So that, between both, an Author
must pass his time ill, who dares plead for
Religion and Moral Virtue, without lessening
the force of either ; but allowing to
each its proper Province, and due Rank,
wou'd hinder their being made Enemys by
Detraction.

HOWEVER it be : If we wou'd pretend to give the least new light, or explain any thing effectually, within the intended Compass of this *Inquiry* ; 'tis necessary to take Things pretty deep ; and endeavour, by some short Scheme, to represent the Original of each Opinion, whether natural or unnatural, relating to the DEITY. And if we can happily get clear of this thorny part of our Philosophy ; the rest, 'tis hop'd, may prove more plain and easy.

S E C T. II.

§. 2.

IN THE Whole of Things (or in the Universe) either all is according to a good Order, and the most agreeable to a general Interest: *or* there is that which is otherwise, and might possibly have been better constituted, more wisely contriv'd, and with more advantage to the general Interest of Beings, or of the Whole.

If every thing which exists be according to a good Order, and *for the best*; then of necessity there is no such thing as real ILL in the Universe, nothing ILL with respect to the Whole.

WHATSOEVER, then, is so as that it cou'd not really have *been* better, or any way *better order'd*, is perfectly good. Whatsoever in the Order of the World can be call'd ILL, must imply a possibility in the nature of the thing to have been better contriv'd, or order'd. For if it cou'd not; it is perfect, and as it shou'd be.

WHATSOEVER is *really* ILL, therefore, must be caus'd or produc'd, either by *Design* (that is to say, with Knowledg and Intelligence) or, in defect of this, by Hazard, and mere *Chance*.

Book I.

State of
Opinions.

IF there be any thing ILL in the Universe from *Design*, then that which disposes all things, is no one good designing Principle. For either the *one* designing Principle is it-self corrupt; or there is some *other* in being which operates contrarily, and is ILL.

IF there be any ILL in the Universe from mere *Chance*; then a designing Principle or Mind, whether Good or Bad, cannot be the Cause of *all* things. And consequently if there be suppos'd a designing Principle, who is the Cause only of Good, but cannot prevent the Ill which happens from Chance, or from a contrary ill Design; then there can be suppos'd in reality no such thing as a superior good Design or Mind, other than what is impotent and defective: For not to correct, or totally exclude that Ill of Chance, or of a contrary ill Design, must proceed either from *Impotency*, or *Ill-will*.

WHATSOEVER is superior in any degree over the World, or rules in Nature with Discernment and a Mind, is what, by universal Agreement, Men call *God*. If there are several such superior Minds, they are so many *Gods*: But if that single, or those several Superiors are not
in

In their nature necessarily good, they rather take the name of DÆMON.

Part 1.
S. 2.

To believe therefore that every thing is govern'd, order'd, or regulated *for the best*, by a designing Principle, or Mind, necessarily good and permanent, is to be a perfect THEIST.

To believe nothing of a designing Principle or Mind, nor any Cause, Measure, or Rule of Things, but *Chance*; so that in Nature neither the Interest of *the Whole*, nor of any *Particulars*, can be said to be in the least design'd, pursu'd, or aim'd at; is to be a perfect ATHEIST.

To believe no *one* supreme designing Principle or Mind, but rather *two, three*, or more, (tho in their nature good) is to be a POLYTHEIST.

To believe the governing Mind, or Minds, not absolutely and necessarily good, nor confin'd to what is best, but capable of acting according to mere Will or Fancy; is to be a DÆMONIST.

THERE are few who think always consistently, or according to one certain Hypothesis, upon any Subject so abstruse and intricate as the *Cause of all Things*, and the *OEconomy or Government of the Universe*.

Book I.

State of
Opinions.

verse. For 'tis evident in the Case of the most devout People, even by their own Confession, that there are Times when their Faith hardly can support 'em in the Belief of a supreme Wisdom; and that they are often tempted to judg disadvantageously of a Providence, and just Administration in the Whole.

THAT alone, therefore, is to be call'd a Man's Opinion, which is of any other the most habitual to him, and occurs upon most occasions: So that 'tis hard to pronounce certainly of any Man, that *he is an Atheist*; because unless his whole Thoughts are at all Seasons, and on all Occasions, steddily bent against all Supposition or Imagination of *Design in Things*, he is no *perfect* ATHEIST. In the same manner, if a Man's Thoughts are not at all times steddy and resolute against all Imagination of *Chance, Fortune, or ill Design in Things*, he is no *perfect* THEIST. But if any one believes more of Chance and Confusion than of Design; he is to be esteem'd more an ATHEIST than a Theist, from that which most predominates, or has the ascendent. And in case he believes more of the Prevalency of an ill-designing Principle, than of a good one, he is rather a DEMONIST; and may be justly so call'd, from the Side to which the Ballance of his Judgment most inclines.

ALL

ALL these sorts both of *Dæmonism*, *Polytheism*, *Atheism*, and *Theism*, may be * mix'd. Religion excludes only *perfect Atheism*. Perfect *Dæmonists* undoubtedly there are in Religion; because we know whole Nations who worship a *Devil* or *Fiend*, to whom they sacrifice and offer Prayers and Supplications, in reality on no other account than because they *fear* him. And we know very well that, in some Religions, there are those who expressly give no other Idea of GOD, than

* As thus :

1. Theism with Dæmonism : 2. Dæmonism with Polytheism : 3. Theism with Atheism : 4. Dæmonism with Atheism : 5. Polytheism with Atheism : 6. Theism (as it stands in opposition to Dæmonism, and denotes Goodness in the superior *Deity*) with Polytheism : 7. The same Theism or Polytheism with Dæmonism : 8. Or with Dæmonism and Atheism.

1. As when *the one* chief Mind, or Sovereign Being, is (in the Believer's sense) divid'd between a good and an ill Nature, by being the Cause of Ill as well as Good : Or otherwise when *Two* distinct and contrary Principles subsist; one, the Author of all Good, the other of all Ill.

2. As when there is not *one*, but *several* corrupt Minds who govern; which Opinion may be call'd *Polydæmonism*.

3. As when Chance is not excluded; but God and Chance divide,

4. As when an evil Dæmon and Chance divide,

5. As when many Minds and Chance divide.

6. As when there are more principal Minds than one, but agreeing in Good, with one and the same Will and Reason.

7. As when the same System of *Deity* or corresponding *Deitys* subsists, together with a contrary Principle, or with several contrary Principles or governing Minds.

8. As when the last Case is, together with Chance.

Book I. of a Being arbitrary, violent, causing ill, and ordaining to Misery; which in effect is the same as to substitute a DÆMON, or Devil, in his room.

*State of
Opinions.*


Now since there are these several Opinions concerning a *superior Power*; and since there may be found perhaps some Persons, who have no form'd Opinion at all upon this Subject; either thro *Scepticism*, Negligence of Thought, or Confusion of Judgment: the Consideration is, how any of these Opinions, or this want of any certain Opinion, may possibly consist with VIRTUE and MERIT; or be compatible with an *honest* or *moral* Character.

PART II.

S E C T. I.

*A Con-
stitution.*

WHEN we reflect on any ordinary Frame or Constitution either of Art or Nature; and consider how hard it is to give the least account of a particular *Part*, without a com-

competent Knowledge of the *Whole*: we Part 3,
need not wonder to find our-selves at a 
loss in many things relating to the Consti- S. 1.
tution and Frame of *Nature* her-self, For *Whole and*
to what End in Nature many things, even *Parts,*
whole Species of Creatures, refer; or to
what purpose they serve; will be hard for
any-one justly to determine; But to what
End the many Proportions and various
Shapes of Parts in many Creatures actually
serve; we are able, by the help of Study
and Observation, to demonstrate, with
great exactness.

WE know that every Creature has a
private Good and Interest of his own;
which Nature has compel'd him to seek,
by all the Advantages afforded him, with-
in the compass of his Make. We know
that there is in reality a right and a wrong
State of every Creature; and that his
right-one is by Nature forwarded, and
by himself affectionately sought. There
being therefore in every Creature a cer-
tain *Interest* or *Good*; there must be also *Interest or*
a certain END, to which every thing in *End in*
his Constitution must *naturally* refer, To *Creatures.*
this END if any thing, either in his Ap-
petites, Passions, or Affections, be not con-
ducting, but the contrary; we must of ne-
cessity own it *ill* to him. And in this
manner he is *ill, with respect to himself*;
as he certainly is, *with respect to others*

Book I. *of his kind*, when any such Appetites or Passions make him any-way injurious to them. Now, if by the natural Constitution of any rational Creature, the same Irregularitys of Appetite which make him ill to Others, make him ill also to *Himself*; and if the same Regularity of Affections, which causes him to be good in *one* sense, causes him to be good also in *the other*; then is that Goodness by which he is thus useful to others, a real Good and Advantage to himself. And thus *Virtue* and *Interest* may be found at last to agree.

Interest of the Species.

Goodness.

OF this we shall consider particularly in the latter part of our *Inquiry*. Our first Design is, to see if we can clearly determine what that Quality is to which we give the Name of *Goodness*, or VIRTUE.

Private Good.

SHOU'D a Historian or Traveller describe to us a certain Creature of a more solitary Disposition than ever was yet heard of; one who had neither Mate nor Fellow of any kind; nothing of his own Likeness, towards which he stood well-affected or inclin'd; nor any thing without, or beyond himself, for which he had the least Passion or Concern: we might be apt to say perhaps, without much hesitation, "That this was doubtless a very melancholy Creature, and that in this

" unso-

“ unfociable and fullen State he was like Part 2.
 “ to have a very difconfolate kind of
 “ Life.” But if we were affur’d, that S. 1.

notwithstanding all Appearances, the Creature enjoy’d himfelf extremely, had a great relifh of Life, and was in nothing wanting to his own Good; we might acknowledge perhaps, “ That the Creature
 “ was no *Monfter*, nor abfurdly conftitu-
 “ ted as to himfelf.” But we fhould hard-
 ly, after all, be induc’d to fay of him,
 “ That he was a good Creature.”

Private
 SYSTEM

However, fhould it be urg’d againft us,
 “ That fuch as he was, the Creature was
 “ ftill *perfect in himfelf*, and therefore to
 “ be esteem’d good: *For what had he to*
 “ *do with others?*” In this fenfe, in-

deed, we might be forc’d to acknowledg,
 “ That he was a good Creature; if he
 “ cou’d be underftood to be abfolute and
 “ compleat in himfelf; without any real
 “ relation to any thing in the Univerfe
 “ befides.” For fhould there be any where

in Nature a *System*, of which this living *System of*
the Specimen
 Creature was to be confider’d as a *Part*;
 then cou’d he no-wife be allow’d good;
 whilft he plainly appear’d to be fuch a
Part, as made rather to the harm than
 good of that System or *Whole* in which he
 was included.

If therefore, in the Structure of this
 or any other Animal, there be any thing
 which

Book I. which points beyond himself, and by which he is plainly discover'd to have relation to some other Being or Nature besides his own; then will this Animal undoubtedly be esteem'd a *Part* of some other System. For instance, if an Animal has the Proportions of a Male, it shews he has relation to a Female. And the respective Proportions both of the Male and Female will be allow'd, doubtless, to have a joint-relation to another Existence and Order of things beyond themselves. So that the Creatures are both of 'em to be consider'd as Parts of *another System*: which is that of a particular Race or Species of living Creatures, who have some one *common Nature*, or are provided for, by some one *Order or Constitution* of things subsisting together, and co-operating towards their Conservation and Support.

*Animal
System.*

IN the same manner, if a whole Species of Animals contribute to the Existence or Well-being of some other; then is that whole Species, in general, a *Part* only of some other System.

FOR instance; To the Existence of the Spider, that of the Fly is absolutely necessary. The heedless Flight, weak Frame, and tender Body of this latter Insect, fits and determines him as much a *Prey*, as the rough Make, Watchfulness, and Cunning of

of the former, fits him for Rapine, and the Part 2.
 ensnaring part. The Web and Wing are ~~~~~
 fitted to each other. And in the Structure S. L.
 of each of these Animals, there is as appa-
 rent and perfect a relation to the other, as
 in our own Bodys there is a relation of
 Limbs and Organs; or, as in the Branches
 or Leaves of a Tree, we see a relation of
 each to the other, and all, in common, to
 one Root and Trunk.

IN the same manner are Flys also neces-
 sary to the Existence of other Creatures,
 both Fowls and Fish. And thus are other
 Species or Kinds subservient to one ano-
 ther; as being *Parts of a certain System*,
 and included in one and the same Order of
 Beings.

So that there is a System of all Animals;
 an *Animal-Order* or *O'Economy*, according
 to which the animal Affairs are regulated
 and dispos'd.

Now, if the whole System of Animals, *System of*
 together with that of Vegetables, and all *the Earth.*
 other things in this inferior World, be
 properly comprehended in *one System* of a
 Globe or Earth: And if, again, this *Globe* *Planetary*
 or *Earth* it-self appears to have a real De- *System.*
 pendence on something still beyond; as,
 for example, either on its Sun, the Ga-
 laxy, or its Fellow-Planets: then is it in
 reality

Book I. reality a PART only of some other System.
 ~~~~~  
 Universal  
 System. And if it be allow'd, that there is in like  
 manner a SYSTEM of *all Things*, and a  
*Universal Nature*; there can be no parti-  
 cular Being or System which is not either  
 good or ill in that *general one* of the *Uni-  
 verse*: For if it be insignificant and of no  
 use, it is a Fault or Imperfection, and con-  
 sequently ill in the general System.

THEREFORE if any Being be *wholly*  
 and *really* ILL, it must be ill with respect  
 to the Universal System; and then the  
 System of the Universe is ill, or imper-  
 fect. But if the Ill of one private System  
 be the Good of others; if it makes still to  
 the Good of the general System (as when  
 one Creature lives by the Destruction of  
 another; one thing is generated from the  
 Corruption of another; or one planetary  
 System or *Vortex* may swallow up ano-  
 ther) then is the Ill of that private System no  
 real Ill in it-self; any more than the pain of  
 breeding Teeth is ill, in a System or Body  
 which is so constituted, that without this  
 occasion of Pain, it wou'd suffer worse, by  
 being defective.

Absolute  
 ILL. So that we cannot say of any Being,  
 that it is *wholly* and *absolutely* ill, unless  
 we can positively shew and ascertain, that  
*what* we call ILL is no where GOOD be-  
 sides, in any other System, or with re-  
 spect

spect to any other Order or Oeconomy Part 2.  
whatsoever.

§. 1.

BUT were there in the World any intire <sup>Relative</sup> Species of Animals destructive to every o- <sup>ILL.</sup> ther, it might be justly call'd an *ill* Species ; as being ill in the *Animal-System*. And if in any Species of Animals (as in *Men*, for example) one Man is of a nature pernicious to the rest, he is in this respect justly stil'd *an ill Man*.

WE do not however say of any-one, that he is an *ill Man* because he has the Plague-Spots upon him, or because he has convulsive Fits which make him strike and wound such as approach him. Nor do we say on the other side, that he is a *good Man*, when having his Hands ty'd up, he is hinder'd from doing the Mischief he designs ; or (which is in a manner the same) when he abstains from executing his ill purpose, thro a fear of some impending Punishment, or thro the allurements of some exterior Reward. <sup>Good and ill Man.</sup>

SO that in a sensible Creature, that <sup>Goodness thro Affection.</sup> which is not done thro any Affection at all, makes neither Good nor Ill in the nature of that Creature ; who then only is suppos'd *Good*, when the Good or Ill of the System to which he has relation, is the immediate Object of some Passion or Affection moving him.

SINCE

Book i.



SINCE it is therefore by Affection merely that a Creature is esteem'd good or ill, *natural* or *unnatural*; our business will be, to examine which are the *good* and *natural*, and which the *ill* and *unnatural* Affections.

## S E C T. II.

*Private  
or Self-  
Affection.*

IN the first place then, it may be observ'd, that if there be an Affection towards any Subject consider'd as private Good, which is \* not really such, but imaginary; this Affection, as being superfluous, and detracting from the Force of other requisite and good Affections, is in it-self vicious and ill, even in respect of the private Interest or Happiness of the Creature.

If there can possibly be suppos'd in a Creature such an Affection towards Self-Good, as is actually, in its natural degree, conducing to his private Interest, and at the same time inconsistent with the publick Good; this may indeed be call'd still a vicious Affection: And on this Supposition a Creature \* cannot really be good and natural in respect of his Society or Publick, without being ill and unnatural towards himself. But if the Affection be

---

\* *Infra*, pag. 79, &c. 163, 4, &c.

then




then only injurious to the Society, when it is immoderate, and not so when it is moderate, duly temper'd, and allay'd; then is the *immoderate* degree of the Affection truly vitious, but not *the moderate*. And thus, if there be found in any Creature a more than ordinary Self-concernment, or Regard to private Good, which is inconsistent with the Interest of the Species or Publick; this must in every respect be esteem'd an ill and vitious Affection. And this is what we commonly call \* SELFISHNESS, and disapprove so much, in whatever Creature we happen to discover it.

On the other side, if the Affection towards private or Self-good, however *selfish* it may be esteem'd, is in reality not only consistent with publick Good, but in some measure contributing to it; if it be such, perhaps, as for the good of the Species in general, every individual ought to share: 'tis so far from being ill, or blameable in any sense, that it must be acknowledged absolutely necessary to constitute a Creature Good. For if the want of such an Affection as that towards Self-preservation, be injurious to the Species; a Creature is ill and unnatural as well thro this Defect, as thro the want of any other natural Affection. And this no-one would

---

\* VOL. I. pag. 120.

**Book I.**  *Private or Self-Affection.* doubt to pronounce, if he saw a Man who minded not any Precipices which lay in his way, nor made any distinction of Food, Diet, Clothing, or whatever else related to his Health and Being. The same wou'd be aver'd of one who had a Disposition which render'd him averse to any Commerce with Womankind, and of consequence unfitted him thro *Illness of Temper* (and not merely thro a *Defect of Constitution*) for the propagation of his Species or Kind.

Thus the Affection towards Self-good, may be a good Affection, or an ill-one. For if this private Affection be too strong (as when the *excessive Love of Life* unfits a Creature for any generous Act) then is it undoubtedly vicious; and if vicious, the Creature who is mov'd by it, is vitiously mov'd, and can never be otherwise than vicious in some degree, when mov'd by that Affection. Therefore if thro such an earnest and passionate *Love of Life*, a Creature be accidentally induc'd to do Good (as he might be upon the same terms induc'd to do ILL) he is no more a good Creature for this Good he executes, than a Man is the more an honest or good Man either for pleading a just Cause, or fighting in a good one, for the sake merely of his Fee or Stipend.

WHAT-

WHATSOEVER therefore is done which happens to be advantageous to the Species, thro an Affection merely towards Self-good, does not imply any more Goodness in the Creature than as the Affection it-self is good. Let him, in any particular, act ever so well; if at the bottom, it be that selfish Affection alone which moves him; he is in himself still vitious. Nor can any Creature be consider'd otherwise, when the Passion towards Self-good, tho ever so moderate, is his real Motive in the doing that, to which a natural Affection for his Kind ought by right to have inclin'd him.

AND indeed whatever exterior Helps or *Temper.* Succours an ill-dispos'd Creature may find; to push him on towards the performance of any one good Action; there can no Goodness arise in him till his *Temper.* be so far chang'd, that in the issue he comes in earnest to be led by some immediate Affection, *directly*, and not *accidentally*, to Good, and against Ill.

FOR instance; if one of those Creatures suppos'd to be by Nature tame, gentle, and favourable to Mankind, be, contrary to his natural Constitution, fierce and savage; we instantly remark the Breach of *Temper*, and own the Creature to be unnatural and corrupt. If at any time after-

Book I. wards, the same Creature, by good Fortune or right Management, comes to lose his Fierceness, and is made tame, gentle, and treatable, like other Creatures of his Kind; 'tis acknowledg'd that the Creature thus restor'd becomes good and natural. Suppose, now, that the Creature has indeed a tame and gentle Carriage; but that it proceeds only from *the fear of his Keeper*; which if set aside, his predominant Passion instantly breaks out: then is his Gentleness not his real Temper; but his true and genuine *Nature* or *natural Temper* remaining just as it was, the Creature is still as *ill* as ever.

Temper.

NOTHING therefore being properly either Goodness or Illness in a Creature, except what is from *natural Temper*; "A good Creature is such a one as by the natural Temper or Bent of his Affections is carry'd *primarily and immediately*, and not *secondarily and accidentally*, to Good, and against Ill:" And an *ill Creature* is just the contrary; *viz.* "One who is wanting in right Affections, of force enough to carry him *directly* towards Good, and bear him out against Ill; or who is carry'd by other Affections directly to Ill, and against Good."

WHEN in general, all the Affections or Passions are suited to the publick Good, or good

good of the Species, as above-mention'd; Part 2. then is the *natural Temper* intirely good. If, on the contrary, any requisite Passion be wanting; or if there be any one super-numerary, or weak, or any-wise disserviceable, or contrary to that main End; then is the *natural Temper*, and consequently the Creature himself, in some measure corrupt and *ill*. S. 2.

THERE is no need of mentioning either *Envy*, *Malice*, *Frowardness*, or other such hateful Passions; to shew in what manner they are ill, and constitute an *ill* Creature. But it may be necessary perhaps to remark, that even as to *Kindness* and *Love* of the most natural sort (such as that of any Creature for its Offspring) if it be immoderate and beyond a certain degree, it is undoubtedly vitious. For thus over-great *Tenderness* destroys the Effect of Love, and excessive *Pity* renders us incapable of giving succour. Hence the Excess of motherly Love is own'd to be a *vitious Fondness*; over-great Pity, *Effeminacy* and *Weakness*; over-great Concern for Self-preservation, *Meanness* and *Cowardice*; too little, *Rashness*; and none at all, or that which is contrary (*viz.* a Passion leading to Self-destruction) a *mad* and *desperate Depravity*.

## S E C T. III.

**B**UT to proceed from what is esteem'd mere *Goodness*, and lies within the reach and capacity of all *sensible Creatures*, to that which is call'd VIRTUE or MERIT, and is allow'd to *Man* only.

*Reflex Affection.*

IN a Creature capable of forming general Notions of Things, not only the outward Beings which offer themselves to the Sense, are the Objects of the Affection; but the very *Actions* themselves, and the *Affections* of Pity, Kindness, Gratitude, and their Contraries, being brought into the Mind by Reflection, become Objects. So that, by means of this reflected Sense, there arises another kind of Affection towards those very Affections themselves, which have been already felt, and are now become the Subject of a new Liking or Dislike.

THE Case is the same in the *mental* or *moral* Subjects, as in the ordinary *Bodys*, or common Subjects of *Sense*. The Shapes, Motions, Colours, and Proportions of these latter being presented to our Eye; there necessarily results a \* Beauty or Deformity, according to the different Measure, Ar-

---

\* *Infra*, pag. 414.

rangement and Disposition of their several Part 2.  
Parts. So in *Behaviour* and *Actions*, when  
presented to our Understanding, there must  
be found, of necessity, an apparent Difference, according to the Regularity or Irregularity of the Subjects. S. 3.

THE MIND, which is Spectator or Auditor of *other Minds*, cannot be without its *Eye* and *Ear*; so as to discern Proportion, distinguish Sound, and scan each Sentiment or Thought which comes before it. It can let nothing escape its Censure. It feels the Soft and Harsh, the Agreeable and Disagreeable, in the Affections; and finds a *Foul* and *Fair*, a *Harmonious* and a *Dissonant*, as really and truly here, as in any musical Numbers, or in the outward Forms or Representations of sensible Things. Nor can it \* withhold its *Admiration* and *Extasy*, its *Aversion* and *Scorn*, any more in what relates to one than to the other of these Subjects. So that to deny the common and natural Sense of a **SUBLIME** and **BEAUTIFUL** in Things, will appear an † Affectation merely, to any one who considers duly of this Affair. *Moral Beauty and Deformity.*

Now as in the *sensible* kind of Objects, the Species or Images of Bodys, Colours, and Sounds, are perpetually moving before

\* *Infra*, pag. 415, 418, 419, &c.

† VOL. I. p. 90, 91, 2, 3. VOL. III. p. 32, &c.

Book I. our Eyes, and acting on our Senses, even when we sleep; so in the *moral* and *intellectual* kind, the Forms and Images of Things are no less active and incumbent on the Mind, at all Seasons, and even when the real Objects themselves are absent.

*Moral  
Beauty  
and De-  
formity.*

IN these vagrant Characters or Pictures of *Manners*, which the Mind of necessity figures to it-self, and carries still about with it, the Heart cannot possibly remain neutral; but constantly takes part one way or other. However false or corrupt it be within it-self, it finds the difference, as to Beauty and Comeliness, between one *Heart* and another, one *Turn of Affection*, one *Behaviour*, one *Sentiment* and another; and accordingly, in all disinterested Cases, must approve in some measure of what is natural and honest, and disapprove what is dishonest and corrupt.

THUS the several Motions, Inclinations, Passions, Dispositions, and consequent Carriage and Behaviour of Creatures in the various Parts of Life, being in several Views or Perspectives represented to the Mind, which readily discerns the Good and Ill towards the Species or Publick; there arises a new Trial or Exercise of the Heart: which must either rightly and soundly affect what is just and right, and disaffect what is contrary; or, corruptly affect



affect what is ill, and disaffect what is Part 2.  
worthy and good.

S. 3.

AND in this case alone it is we call any *Publick*  
Creature *worthy* or *virtuous*, when it can *Good an*  
have the Notion of a publick Interest, and *Object.*  
can attain the Speculation or Science of  
what is morally good or ill, admirable or  
blameable, right or wrong. For tho we  
may vulgarly call an ill Horse *vicious*, yet  
we never say of a good-one, nor of any  
mere Beast, Idiot, or Changeling, tho ever  
so good-natur'd, that he is *worthy* or *vir-*  
*tuous*.

So that if a Creature be generous, kind,  
constant, compassionate; yet if he cannot  
reflect on what he himself does, or sees o-  
thers do, so as to take notice of what is  
*worthy* or *honest*; and make that Notice or  
Conception of *Worth* and *Honesty* to be an  
Object of his Affection; he has not the  
Character of being *virtuous*: for thus, and *GOOD-*  
no otherwise, he is capable of having a *NESS*  
*Sense of Right or Wrong*; a Sentiment or *and VIR-*  
Judgment of what is done, thro just, equal, *TUE.*  
and good Affection, or the contrary.

WHATSOEVER is done thro any un- *Unequal*  
equal Affection, is *iniquous*, *wicked*, and *Affection,*  
*wrong*. If the Affection be equal, sound, *or Iniqui-*  
and good, and the Subject of the Affec- *ty.*  
tion such as may with advantage to So-  
ciety

Book I. ciety be ever in the same manner prosecuted, or affected; this must necessarily constitute what we call *Equity* and *Right* in any Action. For, *WRONG* is not such Action as is barely the Cause of Harm (since at this rate a dutiful Son aiming at an Enemy, but by mistake or ill chance happening to kill his Father, would do a *Wrong*) but when any thing is done thro' insufficient or unequal Affection (as when a Son shews no Concern for the Safety of a Father; or, where there is need of Succour, prefers an indifferent Person to him) this is of the nature of *Wrong*.

*Impair'd  
Sense.*

NEITHER can any Weakness or Imperfection in the Senses be the occasion of *Iniquity* or *Wrong*; if the Object of the Mind it-self be not at any time absurdly fram'd, nor any way improper, but suitable, just, and worthy of the Opinion and Affection apply'd to it. For if we will suppose a Man, who being sound and intire both in his Reason and Affection, has nevertheless so deprav'd a Constitution or Frame of Body, that the natural Objects are, thro' his Organs of Sense, as thro' ill Glasses, falsely convey'd and misrepresented; 'twill be soon observ'd, in such a Person's case, that since his Failure is not in his principal or leading Part, he cannot in himself be esteem'd *iniquitous*, or unjust.

TIS

'TIS otherwise in what relates to *Opinion*, Belief or Speculation. For as the Extravagance of Judgment or Belief is such, that in some Countrys even Monkeys, Cats, Crocodiles, and other vile or destructive Animals, have been esteem'd *holy*, and worshipp'd even as *Deity's*; shou'd it appear to any-one of the Religion or Belief of those Countrys, that to save such a Creature as a Cat, preferably to a Parent, was *Right*; and that other Men, who had not the same religious Opinion, were to be treated as *Enemys*, till converted; this wou'd be certainly *Wrong*, and wicked in the Believer: And every Action, grounded on this Belief, wou'd be an *iniquous*, wicked and vitious Action.

§. 3.  
*Corrupts*  
*Opinion.*

AND thus whatsoever causes a Miscon-ception or Misapprehension of the Worth or Value of any Object, so as to diminish a due, or raise any undue, irregular, or unsocial Affection, must necessarily be the occasion of *Wrong*. Thus he who affects or loves a Man for the sake of something which is reputed honourable, but which is in reality vitious, is himself vitious and ill. The beginnings of this Corruption may be noted in many Occurrences: As when an ambitious Man, by the Fame of his high Attempts, a Conqueror or a Pirate by his boasted Enterprizes, raises in another Person

*Right and*  
*Wrong.*

Book I. Person an Esteem and Admiration of that immoral and inhuman Character, which deserves Abhorrence: 'tis then that the Hearer becomes corrupt, when he secretly approves the Ill he hears. But on the other side, the Man who loves and esteems another, as believing him to have that Virtue which he has not, but only counterfeits, is not on this account either vicious or corrupt.

*Right and Wrong.*

A MISTAKE therefore *in Fact* being no Cause or Sign of ill Affection, can be no Cause of Vice. But a Mistake of *Right* being the Cause of unequal Affection, must of necessity be the Cause of vicious Action, in every intelligent or rational Being.

BUT as there are many Occasions where the matter of *Right* may even to the most discerning part of Mankind appear difficult; and of doubtful Decision, 'tis not a slight Mistake of this kind which can destroy the Character of a *virtuous or worthy Man*. But when, either thro Superstition or ill Custom, there come to be very gross Mistakes in the assignment or application of the Affection; when the Mistakes are either in their nature so gross, or so complicated and frequent, that a Creature cannot well live in a natural State; nor with due Affections, compatible with human Society and Civil Life; then is the Character of *VIRTUE* forfeited.

AND

AND thus we find how far WORTH and VIRTUE depend on a knowledge of *S. 3.* *Right and Wrong*, and on a use of Reason, *VICE in Opinion.* sufficient to secure a right application of the Affections; that nothing horrid or unnatural, nothing unexemplary, nothing destructive of that natural Affection by which the Species or Society is upheld, may, on any account, or thro any Principle or Notion of Honour or Religion, be at any time affected or prosecuted as a good and proper object of Esteem. For such a Principle as this must be wholly vicious: and whatsoever is acted upon it, can be no other than Vice and Immorality. *Vicious Worship.* And thus if there be any thing which teaches Men either Treachery, Ingratitude, or Cruelty, by divine Warrant; or under colour and pretence of any present or future Good to Mankind: if there be any thing which teaches Men to \* persecute their Friends thro Love; or to torment Captives of War in sport; or to offer † human Sacrifice; or to torment, macerate, or mangle themselves, in a religious Zeal, before their God; or to commit any sort of Barbarity, or Brutality, as amiable or becoming: be it Custom which gives Applause, or Religion which gives a Sanction; this is not, nor ever can be *Virtue*,

\* VOL. I. p. 18, 19, 20. VOL. III. p. 115.

† VOL. III. p. 124.

Book I. of any kind, or in any sense ; but must remain still horrid Depravity, notwithstanding any Fashion, Law, Custom or Religion, which may be ill and vitious *it-self* ; but can never alter the *eternal Measures*, and immutable independent Nature of *Worth* and VIRTUE.

*Vicious  
Custom.*

## S E C T. IV.

*Sensible  
and rational  
Ob-  
jects.*

UPON the whole. As to those Creatures who are only capable of being mov'd by *sensible Objects* ; they are accordingly *good* or *vitious*, as the sensible Affections stand with them. 'Tis otherwise in Creatures capable of framing *rational Objects* of moral Good. For in one of this kind, shou'd the *sensible Affections* stand ever so much amiss ; yet if they prevail not, because of those other *rational Affections* spoken of ; 'tis evident, the Temper still holds good in the main ; and the Person is with justice esteem'd virtuous by all Men.

*Trial of  
Virtue.*

MORE than this. If by Temper any one is passionate, angry, fearful, amorous ; yet resists these Passions, and notwithstanding the force of their Impression, adheres to *Virtue* ; we say commonly in this case, *that the Virtue is the greater* : and we say well. Tho if that which restrains the Person, and holds him to a virtuous-like Behaviour,

haviour, be no Affection towards Goodness or Virtue it-self, but towards private Good merely, he is not in reality the more virtuous; as has been shewn before. But this still is evident, that if voluntarily, and without foreign Constraint, an angry Temper bears, or an amorous one refrains, so that neither any cruel or immodest Action can be forc'd from such a Person, tho ever so strongly tempted by his Constitution; we applaud his Virtue above what we shou'd naturally do, if he were free of this Temptation, and these Propensities. At the same time, there is no body will say that a Propensity to Vice can be an Ingredient in Virtue, or any-way necessary to compleat a virtuous Character.

Part 2.

S. 4.

THERE seems therefore to be some kind of difficulty in the Case: But it amounts only to this. If there be any part of the Temper in which ill Passions or Affections are seated, whilst in another part the Affections towards moral Good are such as absolutely to master those Attempts of their Antagonists; this is the greatest *Proof* imaginable, that a strong Principle of Virtue lies at the bottom, and has possess'd it-self of the natural Temper. Whereas if there be no ill Passions stirring, a Person may be indeed more *cheaply virtuous*; that is to say, he may conform himself to the known Rules of Virtue, without

Book I. without sharing so much of a virtuous Principle as another. Yet if that other Person, who has the Principle of Virtue so strongly implanted, comes at last to lose those contrary Impediments suppos'd in him, he certainly loses nothing in Virtue; but on the contrary, losing only what is vitious in his Temper, is left more intire to Virtue, and possesses it in a higher degree.

Degrees of  
Virtue.

THUS is *Virtue* shar'd in different degrees by rational Creatures; such at least as are call'd *rational*; but who come short of that sound and well-establish'd Reason, which alone can constitute a *just Affection*, a uniform and steady *Will* and *Resolution*. And thus Vice and Virtue are found variously mix'd, and alternately prevalent in the several Characters of Mankind. For it seems evident from our *Inquiry*, that how ill soever the Temper or Passions may stand with respect either to the sensible or the moral Objects; however passionate, furious, lustful or cruel any Creature may become; however vitious the Mind be; or whatever ill Rules or Principles it goes by; yet if there be any Flexibleness or favourable Inclination towards the least moral Object, the least appearance of moral Good (as if there be any such thing as *Kindness*, *Gratitude*, *Bounty*, or *Compassion*) there is still something of *Virtue* left;



left; and the Creature is not wholly vitious Part 2.  
and unnatural.

S. 4.

THUS a Ruffian, who out of a sense of Fidelity and Honour of any kind, refuses to discover his Associates; and rather than betray them, is content to endure Torments and Death; has certainly some Principle of Virtue, however he may misapply it. 'Twas the same Case with that Malefactor, who rather than do the Office of Executioner to his Companions, chose to keep 'em company in their Execution.

IN short: As it seems hard to pronounce of any Man, "That he is *absolutely an Atheist*;" so it appears altogether as hard to pronounce of any Man, "That he is *absolutely corrupt or vitious*;" there being few, even of the horriddest Villains, who have not something of *Virtue* in this imperfect sense. Nothing is more just than a known saying, "That it is as hard to find *a Man wholly Ill, as wholly Good*:" because wherever there is any good Affection left, there is certainly some *Goodness* or *Virtue* still in being.

AND, having consider'd thus of VIRTUE, *What it is in it-self*; we may now consider how it stands *with respect to the Opinions concerning a DEITY*, as above-mention'd.

PART

PART III.

SECT. I.

*Causes of  
VICE.*

**T**HE Nature of VIRTUE consisting (as has been explain'd) *in a certain just Disposition, or proportionable Affection of a rational Creature towards the moral Objects of Right and Wrong*; nothing can possibly in such a Creature exclude a Principle of Virtue, or render it ineffectual, except what

1. EITHER takes away the *natural* and *just* Sense of Right and Wrong.

2. OR creates a *wrong* Sense of it.

3. OR causes the right Sense to be oppos'd, by *contrary* Affections.

*of VIR-  
TUE.*

ON the other side, nothing can assist, or advance the Principle of Virtue, except what *either* in some manner nourishes and promotes a Sense of Right and Wrong; *or* preserves it genuine and uncorrupt; *or* causes it, when such, to be obey'd; by  
subduing


subduing and subjecting the other Affections to it. Part 3.

S. 1.

WE are to consider, therefore, how any of the above-mention'd Opinions on the Subject of a DEITY, may influence in these Cases, or produce either of these three Effects.

I. AS to the first Case; THE TAKING AWAY THE NATURAL SENSE OF RIGHT AND WRONG. *Loss of Moral Sense.*

It will not surely be understood, that by this is meant *the taking away the Notion of what is good or ill in the Species, or Society.* For of the Reality of such a Good and Ill, no rational Creature can possibly be insensible. Every-one discerns and owns a publick Interest, and is conscious of what affects his Fellowship or Community. When we say therefore of a Creature, "That he has wholly lost the Sense of Right and Wrong;" we suppose that being able to discern the Good and Ill of his Species, he has at the same time no Concern for either, nor any Sense of Excellency or Baseness in any moral Action, relating to one or the other. So that except merely with respect to a private and narrowly-confined Self-good, 'tis suppos'd there is in such a Creature no Liking or

Book I. *Dislike* of Manners; no Admiration, or  
 Love of any thing as morally good; nor  
 Hatred of any thing as morally ill; be it  
 ever so unnatural or deform'd.

*Moral  
 Sense.*

THERE is in reality no rational Crea-  
 ture whatsoever, who knows not that when  
 he voluntarily offends or does harm to any-  
 one, he cannot fail to create an Apprehen-  
 sion and Fear of like harm, and consequent-  
 ly a Resentment and Animosity in every  
 Creature who observes him. So that the  
 Offender must needs be conscious of being  
 liable to such Treatment from every-one,  
 as if he had in some degree offended All.

THUS Offence and Injury are always  
 known as punishable by every-one; and e-  
 qual Behaviour (which is therefore call'd  
 MERIT) as rewardable and well-deserving  
 from every-one. Of this even the wicked-  
 est Creature living must have a *Sense*. So  
 that if there be any further meaning in this  
*Sense* of Right and Wrong; if in reality  
 there be any *Sense* of this kind which an  
 absolute wicked Creature has not; it must  
 consist in a real Antipathy or Aversion to  
*Injustice* or *Wrong*, and in a real Affection  
 or Love towards *Equity* and *Right*, for its  
 own sake, and on the account of its own  
 natural Beauty and Worth.

TIS

'Tis impossible to suppose a mere sensible Creature originally so ill-constituted, and unnatural, as that from the moment he comes to be try'd by sensible Objects, he shou'd have no one good Passion towards his Kind, no foundation either of Pity, Love, Kindness, or social Affection. 'Tis full as impossible to conceive, that a rational Creature coming first to be try'd by rational Objects, and receiving into his Mind the Images or Representations of Justice, Generosity, Gratitude, or other Virtue, shou'd have no *Liking* of these, or *Dislike* of their contraries; but be found absolutely indifferent towards whatsoever is presented to him of this sort. A Soul, indeed, may as well be without *Sense*, as without Admiration in the Things of which it has any knowledg. Coming therefore to a Capacity of seeing and admiring in this new way, it must needs find a Beauty and a Deformity as well in Actions, Minds, and Tempers, as in Figures, Sounds, or Colours. If there be no *real* Amiableness or Deformity in moral Acts, there is at least *an imaginary one* of full force. Tho perhaps the Thing itself shou'd not be allow'd in Nature, the Imagination or Fancy of it must be allow'd to be from Nature alone. Nor can any thing besides Art and strong Endeavour, with long Practice and Meditation, over-

Book 1. come such a *natural Prevention*, or \* *Prepossession* of the Mind, in favour of this moral Distinction.

How impaired :

By opposite Affection, or Antipathy ;

SENSE of Right and Wrong therefore being as natural to us as *natural Affection* itself, and being a first Principle in our Constitution and Make ; there is no speculative Opinion, Persuasion or Belief, which is capable *immediately* or *directly* to exclude or destroy it. That which is of original and pure Nature, nothing beside contrary Habit and Custom (a second Nature) is able to displace. And this Affection being *an original* one of earliest rise in the Soul or affectionate Part ; nothing beside contrary Affection, by frequent check and controul, can operate upon it, so as either to diminish it in part, or destroy it in the whole.

'TIS evident in what relates to the Frame and Order of our *Bodys* ; that no particular odd Mein or Gesture, which is either natural to us, and consequent to our Make, or accidental and by Habit acquir'd, can possibly be overcome by our immediate Disapprobation, or the contrary Bent of our Will, ever so strongly set against it. Such a Change cannot be effected without extraordinary Means, and the intervention of Art and Method, a strict Attention, and repeated Check. And

\* *Infra*, p. 412, 420, 421.

even thus, Nature, we find, is hardly master'd; but lies fullen, and ready to revolt, on the first occasion. Much more is this the Mind's Case in respect of that natural Affection and anticipating Fancy, which makes the Sense of Right and Wrong. 'Tis impossible that this can instantly, or without much Force and Violence, be effac'd, or struck out of the natural Temper, even by, means of the most extravagant Belief or Opinion in the World.

Part 3.

§. 2.

Not by  
Opinion  
merely,

NEITHER *Theism* therefore, nor *Atheism*, nor *Dæmonism*, nor any religious or irreligious Belief of any kind, being able to operate immediately or directly in this Case, but indirectly, by the intervention of opposite or of favourable Affections casually excited by any such Belief; we may consider of this Effect in our last Case, where we come to examine the Agreement or Disagreement of other Affections with this natural and moral one which relates to Right and Wrong.

## S E C T. H.

II. **A**S to the second Case, viz. THE Corruption of Moral Sense, WRONG SENSE OR FALSE IMAGINATION OF RIGHT AND WRONG.

THIS can proceed only from the Force of Custom and Education in opposition to

Book I. Nature; as may be noted in those Countrys where, according to Custom or politick Institution, certain Actions naturally foul and odious are repeatedly view'd with Applause, and Honour ascrib'd to them. For thus 'tis possible that a Man, forcing himself, may eat the Flesh of his Enemy's, not only against his Stomach, but against his Nature, and think it nevertheless both right and honourable; as supposing it to be of considerable service to his Community, and capable of advancing the Name, and spreading the Terror of his Nation.

*Corruption  
of moral  
Sense.*

*Causes of  
this Cor-  
ruption.*

*Custom.*

*Supersti-  
tion.*

BUT to speak of the Opinions relating to *DEITY*; and what effect they may have in this place. As to *Atheism*, it does not seem that it can directly have any effect at all towards the setting up a false Species of Right or Wrong. For notwithstanding a Man may thro Custom, or by licentiousness of Practice, favour'd by *Atheism*, come in time to lose much of his natural *moral Sense*; yet it does not seem that *Atheism* shou'd of *it-self* be the cause of any estimation or valuing of any thing as fair, noble, and deserving, which was the contrary. It can never, for instance, make it be thought that the being able to eat Man's Flesh, or commit *Bestiality*, is good and excellent in *it-self*. But this is certain, that by means of *corrupt Religion*, or *SUPERSTITION*, many things, the most



most horridly unnatural and inhuman, come Part 3.  
to be receiv'd as excellent, good, and lau-  
dable in themselves. S. 2.

NOR is this a wonder. For where-ever any thing, in its nature odious and abominable, is by Religion advanc'd, as the suppos'd Will or Pleasure of a *supreme Deity*; if in the eye of the Believer it appears not indeed in any respect the less ill or odious on this account; then must *the Deity* of necessity bear the blame, and be consider'd as a Being naturally ill and odious, however courted, and solicited, thro Mistrust and Fear. But this is what Religion, in the main, forbids us to imagine. It everywhere prescribes Esteem and Honour in company with Worship and Adoration. Whensoever therefore it teaches the Love and Admiration of a *DEITY*, who has any apparent Character of *Ill*; it teaches at the same time a Love and Admiration of *that Ill*, and causes that to be taken for good and amiable, which is in it-self horrid and detestable.

FOR instance: if JUPITER be He who is ador'd and reverenc'd; and if his History represents him amorously inclin'd, and permitting his Desires of this kind to wander in the loosest manner; 'tis certain that his Worshippers, believing this History to be literally and strictly true, must of  
D 4 course

Book I. course be taught a greater Love of amorous and wanton Acts. If there be a Religion which teaches the Adoration and Love of a GOD, whose Character it is to be capacious, and of high resentment, subject to Wrath and Anger, furious, revengeful; and revenging himself, when offended, on others than those who gave the Offence; and if there be added to the Character of this GOD, a fraudulent Disposition, encouraging Deceit and Treachery amongst Men; favourable to a few, tho' for slight causes, and cruel to the rest: 'tis evident that such a Religion as this being strongly enforced, must of necessity raise even an Approbation and Respect towards the Vices of this kind, and breed a sutable Disposition, a capricious, partial, revengeful, and deceitful Temper. For even *Irregularitys* and *Enormitys* of a heinous kind must in many cases appear illustrious to one, who considers them in a Being admir'd and contemplated with the highest Honour and Veneration.

*Superstition.*

THIS indeed must be allow'd; that if in the *Cult* or Worship of such a Deity there be nothing beyond common Form, nothing beside what proceeds from mere Example, Custom, Constraint, or Fear; if there be, at the bottom, no real Heartiness, no Esteem or Love imply'd; the Worshipper perhaps may not be much misled

miss'd as to his Notion of Right and Part 3.  
 Wrong. If in following the Precepts of his suppos'd GOD, or doing what he esteems necessary towards the satisfying of such his DEITY, he is compell'd only by *Fear*, and, contrary to his Inclination, performs an Act which he secretly detests as barbarous and unnatural; then has he an Apprehension or *Sense* still of Right and Wrong, and, according to what has been already observ'd, is sensible of Ill in the Character of his GOD; however cautious he may be of pronouncing any thing on this Subject, or so thinking of it, as to frame any formal or direct Opinion in the case. But if by insensible degrees, as he proceeds in his religious Faith and devout Exercise, he comes to be more and more reconcil'd to the Malignity, Arbitrariness, Partiality, or Revengefulness of his believ'd DEITY; his Reconciliation with these Qualitys themselves will soon grow in proportion; and the most cruel, unjust, and barbarous Acts, will, by the power of this Example, be often consider'd by him, not only as just and lawful, but as divine; and worthy of imitation.

FOR whoever thinks there is a GOD, and pretends formally to believe that he is *just* and *good*, must suppose that there is independently such a thing as *Justice* and *Injustice*, *Truth* and *Falshood*, *Right* and *Wrong*;

Book I.



Superstition.

*Wrong*; according to which he pronounces that *God is just, righteous, and true*. If the mere *Will, Decree, or Law* of God be said absolutely to constitute *Right* and *Wrong*, then are these latter words of no significancy at all. For thus if each part of a Contradiction were affirm'd for Truth by the supreme Power, they wou'd consequently become *true*. Thus if one Person were decreed to suffer for another's fault, the Sentence wou'd be *just* and *equitable*. And thus, in the same manner, if arbitrarily, and without reason, some Beings were destin'd to endure perpetual Ill, and others as constantly to enjoy Good; this also wou'd pass under the same Denomination. But to say of any thing that it is *just* or *unjust*, on such a foundation as this, is to say nothing, or to speak without a meaning.

AND thus it appears, that where a real Devotion and hearty Worship is paid to a supreme Being, who in his History or Character is represented otherwise than as really and truly just and good; there must ensue a Loss of Rectitude, a Disturbance of Thought, and a Corruption of Temper and Manners in the Believer. His Honesty will, of necessity, be supplanted by his Zeal, whilst he is thus unnaturally influenc'd, and render'd thus immorally devout.

To

To this we need only add, that as the *ill Character* of a God does injury to the Affections of Men, and disturbs and impairs the natural Sense of Right and Wrong; so, on the other hand, nothing can more highly contribute to the fixing of right Apprehensions, and a sound Judgment or Sense of Right and Wrong, than to believe a God who is ever, and on all accounts, represented such as to be actually a true Model and Example of the most exact Justice, and highest Goodness and Worth. Such a View of divine Providence and Bounty, extended to *All*, and express'd in a constant good Affection towards *the Whole*, must of necessity engage us, within our Compass and Sphere, to act by a like Principle and Affection. And having once the Good of our Species or Publick in view, as our End or Aim, 'tis impossible we shou'd be misguided by any means to a false Apprehension or Sense of Right or Wrong.

As to this second Case therefore; RELIGION (according as the kind may prove) is capable of doing great Good, or Harm; and ATHEISM nothing positive in either way. For however it may be indirectly an occasion of Mens losing a good and sufficient Sense of Right and Wrong; it will not, *as Atheism merely,*  
be

Book I. be the occasion of setting up a false Species of it; which only false Religion or fantastical Opinion, deriv'd commonly from Superstition and Credulity, is able to effect.

## S E C T. III.

*Opposition  
of the Af-  
fections.*

NOW as to the last Case, THE OPPOSITION MADE BY OTHER AFFECTIONS TO THE NATURAL SENSE OF RIGHT AND WRONG.

TIS evident, that a Creature having this sort of SENSE or *good Affection* in any degree, must necessarily act according to it; if it happens not to be oppos'd, either by some settled sedate Affection towards a conceiv'd *private Good*, or by some sudden, strong and forcible Passion, as of *Lust* or *Anger*; which may not only subdue the Sense of Right and Wrong, but the very Sense of private Good it-self; and overrule even the most familiar and receiv'd Opinion of what is conducing to Self-interest.

BUT it is not our business in this place to examine the several Means or Methods by which this Corruption is introduc'd or increas'd. We are to consider only how the Opinions concerning a *Deity* can influence one way or another.

THAT

THAT it is possible for a Creature capable of using Reflection, to have a Likening or Dislike of moral Actions, and consequently a Sense of Right and Wrong, before such time as he may have any settled Notion of a God, is what will hardly be question'd: it being a thing not expected, or any way possible, that a Creature such as *Man*, arising from his Childhood slowly and gradually, to several degrees of Reason and Reflection, shou'd, at the very first, be taken up with those Speculations, or more refin'd sort of Reflections, about the Subject of God's Existence.

LET us suppose a Creature, who wanting Reason, and being unable to reflect, has, notwithstanding, many good Qualities and Affections; as Love to his Kind, Courage, Gratitude, or Pity. 'Tis certain that if you give to this Creature a reflecting Faculty, it will at the same instant approve of Gratitude, Kindness, and Pity; be taken with any shew or representation of the social Passion, and think nothing more amiable than this, or more odious than the contrary. And this is *to be capable of VIRTUE*; and *to have a Sense of RIGHT and WRONG*.

## Book I.

*Rise of Moral Sense.*

BEFORE the time, therefore, that a Creature can have any plain or positive Notion one way or other, concerning the Subject of a G O D, he may be suppos'd to have an Apprehension or Sense of *Right* and *Wrong*, and be possess'd of *Virtue* and *Vice* in different degrees; as we know by Experience of those, who having liv'd in such places, and in such a manner as never to have enter'd into any serious Thoughts of Religion, are nevertheless very different among themselves, as to their Characters of Honesty and Worth: some being naturally *modest, kind, friendly*, and consequently Lovers of *kind and friendly Actions*; others *proud, harsh, cruel*, and consequently inclin'd to admire rather the Acts of *Violence* and mere *Power*.

DEITY. Now, as to the Belief of a DEITY, and how Men are influenc'd by it; we may consider, in the first place, on what account Men yield Obedience, and act in conformity to such a supreme Being. It must be either *in the way of his Power*, as presupposing some Disadvantage or Benefit to accrue from him: or *in the way of his EXCELLENCY* and WORTH, as thinking it the Perfection of Nature to imitate and resemble him.



IF (as in the first Case) there be a Belief or Conception of a DEITY, who is consider'd only as *powerful* over his Creature, and enforcing Obedience to his *absolute Will* by particular Rewards and Punishments; and if on this account, thro Hope merely of *Reward*, or fear of *Punishment*, the Creature be incited to do the Good he hates, or restrain'd from doing the Ill to which he is not otherwise in the least degree averse; there is in this Case (as has been already shewn) no Virtue or Goodness whatsoever. The Creature, notwithstanding his good Conduct, is intrinsically of as little Worth, as if he acted in his natural way, when under no dread or terror of any sort. There is no more of *Rectitude*, *Piety*, or *Sanctity* in a Creature thus reform'd, than there is *Meekness* or *Gentleness* in a Tiger strongly chain'd, or *Innocence* and *Sobriety* in a Monkey under the Discipline of the Whip. For however orderly and well those Animals, or Man himself upon like terms, may be induc'd to act, whilst the Will is neither gain'd, nor the Inclination wrought upon, but *Awe* alone prevails and forces Obedience; the Obedience is *servile*, and all which is done thro it, merely *servile*. The greater degree of such a Submission or Obedience, is only the greater *Servility*; whatever may

S. 3.

Hope and Fear.

Book I.  
*Fear.*

may be the Object. For whether such a Creature has a good Master, or an ill one, he is neither more or less servile in his own nature. Be the Master or Superior ever so perfect, or excellent, yet the greater Submission caus'd in this Case, thro' this sole Principle or Motive, is only the lower and more abject Servitude, and implies the greater Wretchedness and Meanness in the Creature, who has those Passions of Self-love so predominant, and is in his Temper so vitious and defective, as has been explain'd.

*Honour  
and Love.*

As to the second Case. If there be a Belief or Conception of a DEITY, who is consider'd as *worthy* and *good*, and admir'd and reverenc'd as such; being understood to have, besides mere Power and Knowledg, the highest Excellence of Nature, such as renders him justly amiable to All; and if in the manner this Sovereign and mighty Being is represented, or, as he is historically describ'd, there appears in him a high and eminent regard to what is good and excellent, a Concern for the good of *All*, and an Affection of Benevolence and Love towards *the Whole*; such an Example must undoubtedly serve (as above explain'd) to raise and increase the Affection towards Virtue, and help to submit and subdue all other Affections to that alone.

*Divine  
Example.*

NOR

NOR is this Good effected by *Example* merely. For where the Theistical Belief is intire and perfect, there must be a steady Opinion of the Superintendency of a Supreme Being, a Witness and Spectator of human Life, and conscious of whatsoever is felt or acted in the Universe : So that in the perfectest Recess, or deepest Solitude, there must be *One* still presum'd remaining with us ; whose Presence singly must be of more moment than that of the most august Assembly on Earth. In such a Presence, 'tis evident, that as the *Shame* of guilty Actions must be the greatest of any ; so must the *Honour* be, of well-doing, even under the unjust Censure of a World. And in this Case, 'tis very apparent how conducing a *perfect Theism* must be to Virtue, and how great Deficiency there is in *Atheism*. S. 3. *Divine Presence.*

WHAT the FEAR of future Punishment, and HOPE of future Reward, added to this Belief, may further contribute towards Virtue, we come now to consider more particularly. So much in the mean while may be gather'd from what has been said above ; That neither this *Fear* or *Hope* can possibly be of the kind call'd *good Affections*, such as are acknowledged the Springs and Sources of all Actions truly good. Nor can this Fear or *Fear and Hope.*

Book 1. Hope, as above intimated, consist in reality with Virtue, or Goodness; if it either stands as *essential* to any moral Performance, or as a *considerable Motive* to any Act, of which some better Affection ought, *alone*, to have been a *sufficient Cause*.

*Self-love,*

*How advanced.*

It may be consider'd withal; That, in this religious sort of Discipline, the Principle of *Self-love*, which is naturally so prevailing in us, being no-way moderated or restrain'd, but rather improv'd and made stronger every day, by the exercise of the Passions in a Subject of more extended Self-interest; there may be reason to apprehend lest the Temper of this kind shou'd extend it-self in general thro all the Parts of Life. For if the Habit be such as to occasion, in every particular, a stricter Attention to Self-good, and private Interest; it must insensibly diminish the Affections towards publick Good, or the Interest of Society; and introduce a certain Narrowness of Spirit, which (as some pretend) is peculiarly observable in the devout Persons and Zealots of almost every religious Persuasion.

*Its Effects in Religion.*

THIS, too, must be confess'd; That if it be *true Piety*, to love God *for his own sake*; the over-sollicitous regard to private Good expected from him, must of

Of necessity prove a diminution of Piety. For whilst God is belov'd only as the Cause of private Good, he is no otherwise belov'd than as any other Instrument or Means of Pleasure by any vicious Creature. Now the more there is of this violent Affection towards *private Good*, the less room is there for the other sort towards *Goodness it-self*, or any good and deserving Object, worthy of Love and Admiration for its own sake; such as God is universally acknowledg'd, or at least by the generality of civiliz'd or refin'd Worshipers.

THIS in this respect that the strong Desire and *Love of Life* may also prove an Obstacle to Piety, as well as to Virtue and publick Love. For the stronger this Affection is in any-one, the less will he be able to have true *Resignation*, or Submission to the Rule and Order of THE DEITY. And if that which he calls *Resignation* depends only on the expectation of infinite Retribution or Reward, he discovers no more Worth or Virtue here, than in any other Bargain of Interest: The meaning of his Resignation being only this, " That he resigns his present Life and Pleasures; conditionally for THAT which he himself confesses to be beyond an Equivalent; " *eternal*

Book 1. "eternal living in a State of highest  
 ~~~~~ "Pleasure and Enjoyment."

Belief of
 future
 Life ;

How ad-
 vanta-
 geous.

BUT notwithstanding the Injury which the Principle of Virtue may possibly suffer, by the Increase of the selfish Passion, in the way we have been mentioning ; 'tis certain, on the other side, that the Principle of *Fear of future Punishment*, and *Hope of future Reward*, how mercenary or servile soever it may be accounted, is yet, in many Circumstances, a great Advantage, Security, and Support to *Virtue*.

Supporting.

IT has been already consider'd, that notwithstanding there may be implanted in the Heart a real Sense of Right and Wrong, a real good Affection towards the Species or Society ; yet by the violence of Rage, Lust, or any other counter-working Passion, this good Affection may frequently be controul'd and overcome. Where therefore there is nothing in the Mind capable to render such ill Passions the Objects of its Aversion, and cause them earnestly to be oppos'd ; 'tis apparent how much a good Temper in time must suffer, and a Character by degrees change for the worse. But if Religion interposing, creates a Belief that the ill *Passions* of this kind, no less than their consequent *Actions*, are the Objects of a Deity's Animad-

Animadversion; 'tis certain that such a Part 3.
 Belief must prove a seasonable Remedy *S. 3.*
 against Vice, and be in a particular man-
 ner advantageous to Virtue. For a Belief
 of this kind must be suppos'd to tend con-
 siderably towards the calming of the Mind,
 and disposing or fitting the Person to a
 better Recollection of himself, and to a
 stricter Observance of that good and vir-
 tuous Principle, which needs only his At-
 tention, to engage him wholly in its Party
 and Interest.

AND as this Belief of a future Reward *Saving;*
 and Punishment is capable of supporting
 those who thro *ill Practice* are like to apo-
 statize from Virtue; so when by *ill Opi-*
nion and wrong Thought, the Mind it-self
 is bent against the honest Course, and de-
 bauch'd even to an Esteem, and deliberate
 Preference of a vitious one; the Belief of
 the kind mention'd may prove on this occa-
 sion the only Relief and Safety.

A PERSON, for instance, who has
 much of Goodness and natural Rectitude
 in his Temper, but withal, so much Soft-
 ness, or Effeminacy, as unfits him to bear
 Poverty, Crosses or Adversity; if by ill
 Fortune he meets with many Trials of
 this kind, it must certainly give a Sour-
 ness and Distaste to his Temper, and
 make him exceedingly averse to that
 E 3 which

Book I. which he may fallily presume the occasion
 of such Calamity or Ill. Now if his own
 Thoughts, or the corrupt Insinuations of
 other Men, present it often to his Mind,
*Belief of
 future
 Life;*
 “ That his HONESTY is the occasion of
 “ this Calamity, and that if he were deli-
 “ ver’d from this Restraint of VIRTUE
 “ and HONESTY, he might be much hap-
 “ pier : ” ’tis very obvious that his Esteem
 of these good Qualitys must in proportion
 diminish every day, as the Temper grows
 uneasy, and quarrels with it-self. But if he
 opposes to this Thought the Consideration,
 “ That Honesty carrys with it, if not a
 “ present, at least a future Advantage,
 “ such as to compensate that Loss of pri-
 “ vate Good which he regrets ; ” then may
 this injury to his good Temper and honest
 Principle be prevented, and his Love or
 Affection towards Honesty and Virtue re-
 main as it was before.

Improving. IN the same manner, where instead of
Regard or Love, there is rather an *Aver-*
sion to what is good and virtuous (as, for
 instance, where *Lenity* and *Forgiveness* are
 despis’d, and *Revenge* highly thought of,
 and belov’d) if there be this Considera-
 tion added, “ That *Lenity* is, by its Re-
 “ wards, made the cause of a greater
 “ Self-good and Enjoyment than what is
 “ found in *Revenge* ; ” that very Affection
 of *Lenity* and *Mildness* may come to be in-
 dustriously

dustriously nourish'd, and the contrary Passions depress'd. And thus *Temperance, Modesty, Candour, Benignity*, and other good Affections, however despis'd at first, may come at last to be valu'd for their own sakes, the contrary Species rejected, and the good and proper Object belov'd and prosecuted, when the Reward or Punishment is not so much as thought of.

Part 3.

§. 3.

THUS in a civil STATE OF PUBLICK, Rewards and Punishments, we see that a virtuous Administration, and an equal and just Distribution of Rewards and Punishments, is of the highest In the State. service; not only by restraining the Vicious, and forcing them to act usefully to Society; but by making Virtue to be apparently the Interest of every-one, so as to remove all Prejudices against it, create a fair reception for it, and lead Men into that path which afterwards they cannot easily quit. For thus a People rais'd from Barbarity or despotick Rule, civiliz'd by Laws, and made virtuous by the long Course of a lawful and just Administration; if they chance to fall suddenly under any Misgovernment of unjust and arbitrary Power, they will on this account be the rather animated to exert a stronger Virtue, in opposition to such Violence and Corruption. And even where, by long and continu'd Arts of a prevailing Tyranny, such a People are at last totally

Book I. oppress'd, the scatter'd Seeds of Virtue will for a long time remain alive, even to a second Generation ; e'er the utmost Force of misapply'd Rewards and Punishments can bring them to the abject and compliant State of long-accustom'd Slaves.

Rewards
and Pu-
nishments.

BUT tho a right Distribution of Justice in a Government be so essential a cause of Virtue, we must observe in this Case, that it is *Example* which chiefly influences Mankind, and forms the Character and Disposition of a People. For a virtuous Administration is in a manner necessarily accompany'd with Virtue in the Magistrate. Otherwise it cou'd be of little effect, and of no long duration. But where it is sincere and well establish'd, there Virtue and the Laws must necessarily be respected and belov'd. So that as to Punishments and Rewards, their Efficacy is not so much from the Fear or Expectation which they raise, as from a natural Esteem of *Virtue*, and Detestation of *Villany*, which is awaken'd and excited by these publick Expressions of the Approbation and Hatred of Mankind in each Case. For in the publick Executions of the greatest Villains, we see generally that the Infamy and Odioufness of their Crime, and the Shame of it before Mankind, contribute more to their Misery than all besides ; and that it is not the immediate Pain, or Death

it-self, which raises so much Horror either Part 3.
 in the Sufferers or Spectators, as that igno- S. 3.
 minious kind of Death which is inflicted
 for publick Crimes, and Violations of Jus-
 tice and Humanity.

AND as the Case of Reward and Punish- In the Fa-
mily.
 ment stands thus in the Publick, so, in the
 same manner, as to *private Families*. For
 Slaves and mercenary Servants, restrain'd
 and made orderly by Punishment, and the
 Severity of their Master, are not on this
 account made good or honest. Yet the
 same Master of the Family using proper
 Rewards and gentle Punishments towards
 his Children, teaches them Goodness, and
 by this help instructs them in a Virtue,
 which afterwards they practise upon other
 grounds, and without thinking of a Penal-
 ty or Bribe. And this is what we call a *Li-
 beral Education* and a *Liberal Service* :
 the contrary Service and Obedience, whe-
 ther towards God or Man, being *illiberal*,
 and unworthy of any Honour or Commem-
 dation.

IN the Case of Religion, however, it In Reli-
gion.
 must be consider'd, that if by the *Hope of*
Reward be understood the Love and De-
 sire of virtuous Enjoyment, or of the very
 Practice and Exercise of Virtue in another
 Life; the Expectation or Hope of this
 kind is so far from being derogatory to
 Virtue,

Book I. Virtue, that it is an Evidence of our loving it the more sincerely and *for its own sake*. Nor can this Principle be justly call'd *selfish*: for if the Love of Virtue be not mere Self-interest, the Love and Desire of Life for Virtue's sake cannot be esteem'd so. But if the Desire of Life be only thro the Violence of that natural Aversion to Death; if it be thro the Love of something else than virtuous Affection, or thro the Unwillingness of parting with something else than what is purely of this kind; then is it no longer any sign or token of real Virtue.

THUS a Person loving Life for Life's sake, and Virtue not at all, may by the Promise or Hope of Life, and Fear of Death, or other Evil, be induc'd to practise Virtue, and even *endeavour* to be truly virtuous, by a Love of what he practises. Yet neither is *this very Endeavour* to be esteem'd a *Virtue*. For tho he may intend to be virtuous; he is not become so, for having only intended, or aim'd at it, thro love of the Reward. But as soon as he is come to have any Affection towards what is morally good, and can like or affect such Good *for its own sake*, as good and amiable *in it-self*; then is he in some degree good and virtuous, and not till then.

SUCH

Part 3.

S. 3.

Security to
Virtue.

SUCH are the Advantages or Disadvantages which accrue to Virtue from Reflection upon private Good or Interest. For tho the Habit of *Selfishness*, and the Multiplicity of *interested Views*, are of little Improvement to real *Merit* or *Virtue*; yet there is a necessity for the Preservation of *Virtue*, that it shou'd be thought to have no quarrel with *true Interest*, and *Self-enjoyment*.

WHOEVER therefore, by any strong Persuasion or settled Judgment, thinks in the main, *That Virtue causes Happiness, and Vice Misery*, carries with him that Security and Assistance to Virtue which is requir'd. Or tho he has no such Thought, nor can believe Virtue his real Interest, either with respect to his own Nature and Constitution, or the Circumstances of human Life; yet if he believes any supreme Powers concern'd in the *present* Affairs of Mankind, and *immediately* interposing in behalf of the Honest and Virtuous, against the Impious and Unjust; this will serve to preserve in him, however, that just Esteem of Virtue, which might otherwise considerably diminish. Or shou'd he still believe little of the *immediate* Interposition of Providence in the Affairs of *this present Life*; yet if he believes a God dispensing Rewards and Punishments to Vice and Virtue in

Book I. in a *future* ; he carries with him still the
 same Advantage and Security ; whilst his
 Belief is steady, and no-wise wavering or
 doubtful. For it must be observ'd, that
 an Expectation and Dependency, so mira-
 culous and great as this, must naturally
 take off from other inferior Dependency's
 and Encouragements. Where infinite Re-
 wards are thus inforc'd, and the Imagina-
 tion strongly turn'd towards them, the o-
 ther common and natural Motives to Good-
 ness are apt to be neglected, and lose much
 by Dis-use. Other Interests are hardly so
 much as computed, whilst the Mind is
 thus transported in the pursuit of a high
 Advantage and Self-interest, so narrowly
 confin'd within our-selves. On this ac-
 count, all other Affections towards Friends,
 Relations, or Mankind, are often slightly
 regarded, as being *worldly*, and of little
 moment, in respect of the Interest of *our*
Soul. And so little thought is there of
 any immediate Satisfaction arising from
 such good Offices of Life, that it is custo-
 mary with many devout People zealously
 to decry all temporal Advantages of Good-
 ness, all natural Benefits of Virtue ; and
 magnifying the contrary Happiness of a
 vitious State, to declare, " That except
 " only for the sake of future Reward, and
 " fear of future Punishment, they wou'd
 " divest themselves of all Goodness at
 " once, and freely allow themselves to be
 " most

Caution.

*Imprudent
Zeal.*

"most immoral and profligate." From Part 3.
 whence it appears, that in some respects
 there can be nothing more * fatal to Vir- S. 3.
 tue, than the weak and uncertain Belief of
 a future Reward and Punishment. For the
 stress being laid wholly here, if this Foun-
 dation come to fail, there is no further
 Prop or Security to Mens Morals. And
 thus Virtue is supplanted and betray'd.

Now as to ATHEISM: tho it be plain- *Atheism*
 ly deficient and without remedy, in the
 case of *ill Judgment on the Happiness of*
Virtue; yet it is not, indeed, of necessity
 the Cause of any such *ill Judgment*. For
 without an absolute Assent to any Hypothe-
 sis of *Theism*, the Advantages of Virtue
 may possibly be seen and own'd, and a high
 Opinion of it establish'd in the Mind. How-
 ever, it must be confess'd, that the natural
 Tendency of Atheism is very different.

'Tis in a manner impossible, to have
 any great opinion of the Happiness of Vir-
 tue, without conceiving high thoughts of
 the Satisfaction resulting from the generous
 Admiration and Love of it: And nothing
 beside the Experience of such a Love is
 likely to make this Satisfaction credited.
 The chief Ground and Support therefore of
 this Opinion of *Happiness in Virtue*, must
 arise from the powerful feeling of this ge-

* VOL. I. p. 97, &c.

Book I. nerous moral Affection, and the Knowledge
 of its Power and Strength. But this is cer-
 tain, that it can be no great strengthening to
 the moral Affection, no great support to
 the pure Love of Goodness and Virtue, to
 suppose there is neither *Goodness* nor *Beau-
 ty* in the WHOLE it-self; nor any Exam-
 ple, or Precedent of good Affection in any
 superior Being. Such a Belief must tend ra-
 ther to the weaning the Affections from
 any thing amiable or self-worthy, and to
 the suppressing the very Habit and familiar
 Custom of admiring natural Beautys, or
 whatever in the Order of things is according
 to just Design, Harmony, and Proportion.
 For how little dispos'd must a Person be, to
 love or admire any thing as *orderly* in the
 Universe, who thinks the Universe it-self a
 Pattern of *Disorder*? How unapt to reve-
 rence or respect any particular subordinate
 Beauty of a *Part*; when even THE WHOLE
 it-self is thought to want Perfection, and
 to be only a vast and infinite Deformity?

NOTHING indeed can be more melan-
 choly, than the Thought of living in a
 distracted Universe, from whence many
 Ills may be suspected, and where there is
 nothing good or lovely which presents it-
 self, nothing which can satisfy in Contem-
 plation, or raise any Passion besides that
 of Contempt, Hatred, or Dislike. Such
 an Opinion as this may by degrees im-
 bitter

Bitter the Temper, and not only make the Part 3.
 Love of Virtue to be less felt, but help to
 impair and ruin the very Principle of Vir- S. 3.
 tue, *viz. natural and kind Affection.*

UPON the whole; whoever has a firm *Theism*,
 Belief of a GOD, whom he does not mere-
 ly *call* good, but of whom in reality he
believes nothing beside *real Good*, nothing
 beside what is truly suitable to the exactest
 Character of Benignity and Goodness; such
 a Person believing Rewards or Retribu-
 tions in another Life, must believe them
 annex'd to real Goodness and Merit, real
 Villany and Baseness, and not to any acci-
 dental Qualities or Circumstances; in which
 respect they cannot properly be *Real Re-*
wards or Punishments, but *capricious Dis-*
tributions of Happiness or Unhappiness, to
Creatures. These are the only Terms on
 which the Belief of a World to come, can
 happily influence the Believer. And on
 these Terms, and by virtue of this Belief,
 Man perhaps may retain his Virtue and In-
 tegrity, even under the hardest Thoughts
 of *human Nature*; when either by any ill
 Circumstance or untoward Doctrine, he is
 brought to that unfortunate Opinion of *Vir-*
tue's being naturally an Enemy to Happi-
ness in Life.

THIS, however, is an Opinion which
 cannot be suppos'd consistent with sound
Theism.


Book I. *Theism.* For whatever be decided as to a future Life, or the Rewards and Punishments of hereafter; he who, as a sound *Theist*, believes a reigning Mind, sovereign in Nature, and ruling all things with the highest perfection of Goodness, as well as of Wisdom and Power, must necessarily believe Virtue to be naturally good and advantageous. For what cou'd more strongly imply an unjust Ordinance, a Blot and Imperfection in the general Constitution of Things, than to suppose Virtue the natural Ill, and Vice the natural Good of any Creature?

*Atheism
and The-
ism.*

AND now last of all, there remains for us to consider a yet further Advantage to Virtue, in the *Theistical* Belief above the *Atheistical*. The Proposition may at first sight appear over-refin'd, and of a sort which is esteem'd too nicely philosophical. But after what has been already examin'd, the Subject perhaps may be more easily explain'd.

*Effects of
each.*

THERE is no Creature, according to what has been already prov'd, who must not of necessity be *ill* in some degree, by having any Affection or Aversion in a stronger degree than is futable to his own private Good, or that of the System to which he is join'd. For in either Case the Affection is *ill* and vitious. Now if a rational

tional Creature has that Degree of Aversion Part 3.
 sion which is requisite to arm him against
 any particular Misfortune, and alarm him  §. 3.
 against the Approach of any Calamity ;
 this is regular and well. But if after the
 Misfortune is happen'd, his Aversion con-
 tinues still, and his Passion rather grows
 upon him ; whilst he rages at the Acci-
 dent, and exclaims against his private For-
 tune or Lot ; this will be acknowledg'd
 both vitious *in present*, and *for the fu-*
ture ; as it affects the Temper, and dis-
 turbs that easy Course of the Affections
 on which Virtue and Goodness so much
 depend. On the other side, the patient
 enduring of the Calamity, and the bear-
 ing up of the Mind under it, must be ac-
 knowledg'd *immediately* virtuous, and *pre-*
servative of Virtue. Now, according to *of Ash-*
 the Hypothesis of those who exclude a *ism*.
 general Mind, it must be confess'd, there
 can nothing happen in the Course of
 things to deserve either our Admiration,
 and Love, or our Anger, and Abhorrence.
 However, as there can be no Satisfaction
 at the best in thinking upon what *Atoms*
and Chance produce ; so upon disastrous
 Occasions, and under the Circumstances
 of a calamitous and hard Fortune, 'tis
 scarce possible to prevent a natural kind of
 Abhorrence and Spleen, which will be en-
 tertain'd and kept alive by the Imagina-
 tion of so perverse an Order of Things.

Book I. But in another Hypothesis (that of perfect Theism) it is understood, "*That whatever the Order of the World produces, is in the main both just and good.*" Therefore in the Course of Things in this World, whatever Hardship of Events may seem to force from any rational Creature a hard Censure of his private Condition or Lot; he may by Reflection nevertheless, come to have Patience, and to acquiesce in it. Nor is this all. He may go further still in this Reconciliation; and from the same Principle may make the Lot itself an Object of his good Affection; whilst he strives to maintain this generous Fealty, and stands so well-dispos'd towards the Laws and Government of his higher Country.

SUCH an Affection must needs create the highest Constancy in any State of Sufferance, and make us in the best manner support whatever Hardships are to be endur'd for Virtue's sake. And as this Affection must of necessity cause a greater Acquiescence and Complacency with respect to ill Accidents, ill Men, and Injuries; so of course it cannot fail of producing still a greater Equality, Gentleness, and Benignity in the Temper. Consequently the Affection must be a truly good one, and a Creature the more truly good and virtuous, by possessing it. For what-

whatsoever is the occasion or means of Part 3.
more affectionately uniting a rational Crea-
ture to his PART in Society, and causes S. 3.
him to prosecute the publick Good, or In-
terest of his Species, with more Zeal and
Affection than ordinary; is undoubtedly
the Cause of more than ordinary Virtue in
such a Person.

THIS too is certain; That the Admi-
ration and Love of Order, Harmony and <sup>Contem-
plation.</sup>
Proportion, in whatever kind, is natural-
ly improving to the Temper, advanta-
geous to social Affection, and highly as-
sistant to *Virtue*; which is it-self no other
than the Love of Order and Beauty in So-
ciety. In the meanest Subjects of the
World, the Appearance of *Order* gains up-
on the Mind, and draws the Affection to-
wards it. But if *the Order of the World*
it-self appears just and beautiful; the Ad-
miration and Esteem of *Order* must run
higher, and the elegant Passion or Love
of Beauty, which is so advantageous to
Virtue, must be the more improv'd by its
Exercise in so ample and magnificent a
Subject. For 'tis impossible that such a *Di-* <sup>Religious
Affection.</sup>
vine Order shou'd be contemplated with-
out * Ecstasy and Rapture; since in the
common Subjects of Science, and the li-
beral Arts, whatever is according to just

* *Infra*, pag. 394, 400, &c. And VOL. III. p. 30, &c.

Book I. Harmony and Proportion, is so transporting to those who have any Knowledge or Practice in the kind.

Now if the Subject and Ground of this divine Passion be not really just or adequate (the Hypothesis of *Theism* being suppos'd false) the Passion still in it-self is so far natural and good, as it proves an Advantage to Virtue and Goodness ; according to what has been above demonstrated. But if, on the other side, the Subject of this Passion be really adequate and just (the Hypothesis of *Theism* being real, and not imaginary) then is the Passion also just, and becomes absolutely *due* and *requisite* in every rational Creature.

Conclusion. HENCE we may determine justly the Relation which VIRTUE has to PIETY ; the *first* being not compleat but in the *latter* : Since where the latter is wanting, there can neither be the same Benignity, Firmness, or Constancy ; the same good Composure of the Affections, or Uniformity of Mind.

AND thus the Perfection and Height of VIRTUE must be owing to *the Belief of a GOD.*

BOOK

BOOK II.

PART I.

SECT. I.

WE have consider'd *what* VIRTUE is, and to whom the Character belongs. It remains to inquire, *What Obligation* there is to VIRTUE; or *what Reason* to embrace it. *Obligation to VIRTUE.*

WE have found, that to deserve the name of *good* or *virtuous*, a Creature must have all his Inclinations and Affections, his Dispositions of Mind and Temper, suitable, and agreeing with the Good of his *Kind*, or of that *System* in which he is included, and of which he constitutes a PART. To stand thus well affected, and to have one's Affections *right* and *intire*, not only in respect of one's self, but of Society and the Publick: This is *Rectitude*, *Integrity*, or VIRTUE. And to be wanting in any of these, or to have their


Book 2. Contrarys, is *Depravity, Corruption, and*
 VICE.

Difficulty
 stated.

IT has been already shewn, that in the Passions and Affections of particular Creatures, there is a constant relation to the Interest of a *Species*, or *common Nature*. This has been demonstrated in the case of *natural Affection*, parental Kindness, Zeal for Posterity, Concern for the Propagation and Nurture of the Young, Love of Fellowship and Company, Compassion, mutual Succour, and the rest of this kind. Nor will any-one deny that this Affection of a Creature towards the Good of the Species or common Nature, is as *proper* and *natural* to him, as it is to any Organ, Part or Member of an Animal-Body, or ~~more~~ Vegetable, to work in its known Course, and regular way of Growth. 'Tis not more *natural* for the Stomach to digest, the Lungs to breathe, the Glands to separate Juices, or other Intrails to perform their several Offices; however they may by particular Impediments be sometimes disorder'd or obstructed in their Operations.

Union
 with a
 Kind or
 Species.

THERE being allow'd therefore in a Creature such Affections as these towards the *common Nature*, or *System of the Kind*, together with those other which regard the *private Nature*, or *Self-system*; it will appear that in following the *first* of these Affections,

fections, the Creature must on many Occa- Part I.
sions contradict and go against *the latter*. 
How else shou'd the Species be preserv'd? S. I.
Or what wou'd signify that implanted *na-
tural Affection*, by which a Creature thro
so many Difficultys and Hazards preserves
its Offspring, and supports its Kind?

It may therefore be imagin'd, perhaps, *Opposition
from Self-
interest.*
that there is a plain and absolute Oppo-
sition between these *two* Habits or Affec-
tions. It may be presum'd, that the pur-
suing the common Interest or publick
Good thro the Affections of *one kind*, must
be a hindrance to the Attainment of pri-
vate Good thro the Affections of *another*.
For it being taken for granted, that Ha-
zards and Hardships, of whatever sort, are
naturally the *Ill* of the private State; and
it being certainly the Nature of those pub-
lick Affections to lead often to the greatest
Hardships and Hazards of every kind;
'tis presently infer'd, "That 'tis the Crea-
ture's Interest to be without any publick
Affection whatsoever."

Thus we know for certain; That all
social Love, Friendship, Gratitude, or
whatever else is of this generous kind,
does by its nature take place of the self-
interesting Passions, draws us out of our-
selves, and makes us disregardful of our
own Convenience and Safety. So that

Book 2.

Opposition
from Self-
interest.

according to a known * way of reasoning on *Self-interest*, that which is of a social kind in us, shou'd of right be abolish'd. Thus Kindness of every sort, Indulgence, Tenderness, Compassion, and in short, all natural Affection shou'd be industriously suppress'd, and, as mere Folly, and Weakness of Nature, be resisted and overcome; that, by this means, there might be nothing remaining in us, which was contrary to a direct *Self-end*; nothing which might stand in opposition to a steady and deliberate Pursuit of the most narrowly confin'd *Self-interest*.

ACCORDING to this extraordinary Hypothesis, it must be taken for granted, "That in the System of a Kind or Species, the Interest of *the private Nature* is directly opposite to that of *the common one*; the Interest of *Particulars* directly opposite to that of *the Publick in general*." — A strange Constitution! in which it must be confess'd there is much Disorder and Untowardness; unlike to what we observe elsewhere in Nature. As if in any vegetable or animal Body, the *Part* or Member cou'd be suppos'd in a good and prosperous State *as to it-self*; when under a contrary Disposition, and in an unnatural Growth or Habit *as to its WHOLE*.

* VOL. I. p. 90, &c. 116, 117, 118, 119, 120,

Now that this is in reality quite otherwise, we shall endeavour to demonstrate; so as to make appear, "That what Men represent as an ill Order and Constitution in the Universe, by making moral Rectitude appear *the Ill*, and Depravity *the Good* or Advantage of a Creature, is in Nature just the contrary. That to be well affected towards the *Publick Interest* and *one's own*, is not only consistent, but inseparable: and that moral Rectitude, or *Virtue*, must accordingly be the Advantage, and *Vice* the Injury and Disadvantage of every Creature."

S. 2.
Reconciliation.

S E C T. II.

THERE are few perhaps, who when they consider a Creature void of natural Affection, and wholly destitute of a communicative or social Principle, will suppose him, at the same time; either tolerably happy in himself, or as he stands abroad, with respect to his Fellow-Creatures or Kind. 'Tis generally thought, that such a Creature as this, feels slender Joy in Life, and finds little Satisfaction in the mere sensual Pleasures which remain with him, after the Loss of social Enjoyment, and whatever can be call'd *Humanity* or *Good-nature*. We know that to such


Contradictory Notions.

Book 2. a Creature as this, 'tis not only *incident*, to be morose, rancorous and malignant; but that, *of necessity*, a Mind or Temper thus destitute of Mildness and Benignity, must turn to that which is contrary, and be wrought by Passions of a different kind. Such a Heart as this must be a continual Sear of perverse Inclinations and bitter Aversions, rais'd from a constant ill Humour, Sorrow, and Disquiet. The Consciousness of such a Nature, so obnoxious to Mankind, and to all Beings which approach it, must overcloud the Mind with dark Suspicion and Jealousy, alarm it with Fears and Horrors, and raise in it a continual Disturbance, even in the most seeming fair and secure State of Fortune, and in the highest degree of outward Prosperity.

In: whole. THIS, as to the *complete* immoral State, is what, of their own accord, Men readily remark. Where there is this *absolute* Degeneracy, this *total* Apostacy from all Candour, Equity, Trust, Sociableness, or Friendship; there are few who do not see and acknowledge the Misery which is consequent. Seldom is the Case misconstr'd, when *at worst*. The misfortune is, we look not on this Depravity, nor consider how it stands, *in less degrees*. The Calamity, we think, does not of necessity hold proportion with the Injustice or Inequity. As if to be *absolutely* immoral and inhuman,

inhuman, were indeed the greatest misfortune and misery; but that to be so, in a *little degree*, shou'd be no misery nor harm at all! Which to allow, is just as reasonable as to own, that 'tis the greatest Ill of a Body to be in the utmost manner distorted and maim'd; but that to lose the use only of *one Limb*, or to be impair'd in some *one single Organ or Member*, is no Inconvenience or Ill worthy the least notice.

THE Parts and Proportions of the *Mind*, Inward Proportion. their mutual Relation and Dependency, the Connexion and Frame of those Passions which constitute the Soul or Temper, may easily be understood by any-one who thinks it worth his while to study this inward Anatomy. 'Tis certain that the Order or Symmetry of this *inward Part* is, in it-self, no less real and exact, than that of the *Body*. However, 'tis apparent that few of us endeavour to become *Anatomists* of this sort. Nor is any-one ashamed of the deepest Ignorance in such a Subject. For tho' the greatest Misery and Ill is generally own'd to be from *Disposicion*, and *Temper*; tho' 'tis allow'd that *Temper* may often change, and that it actually varies on many occasions, much to our disadvantage; yet how this Matter is brought about, we inquire not. We never trouble our-selves to consider thoroughly by what means or methods our *inward Constitution* comes at any

Book 2. any time to be impair'd or injur'd. The
 *Solutio Continui*, which bodily Surgeons
 Continui- talk of, is never apply'd in this case, by
 sy. Surgeons of another sort. The Notion of
 a *Whole* and *Parts* is not apprehended in
 this Science. We know not what the ef-
 fect is, of straining any Affection, indulg-
 ing any wrong Passion, or relaxing any
 proper and natural Habit, or good Inclina-
 tion. Nor can we conceive how a par-
 ticular Action shou'd have such a sudden
 Influence on the whole Mind, as to make
 the Person an immediate Sufferer. We sup-
 pose rather that a Man may violate his Faith,
 commit any Wickedness unfamiliar to him
 before, engage in any Vice or Villany,
 without the least prejudice to *himself*, or
 any Misery *naturally* following from the ill
 Action. *Wickedness* and *vice* are not *ill* in
 themselves, but they are *ill* in their
 consequences. 'Tis thus we hear it often said, "Such
 a Person has done ill indeed: But what
 is he the worse for it?" Yet speaking
 of any Nature thorowly savage, curst, and
 inveterate, we say truly, "Such a one is
 a plague and torment to himself:" And
 we allow, "That thro' certain *Humours*,
 or *Passions*, and from *Temper* merely, a
 Man may be compleatly miserable; let
 his outward *Circumstances* be ever so
 fortunate. These different Judg-
 ments sufficiently demonstrate that we are
 not accusom'd to think with much cohe-
 rency

rency on these moral Subjects ; and that Part 1.
our Notions, in this respect, are not a lit-
tle confus'd, and contradictory. S. 2.

Now if the Fabrick of the Mind or *Fabrick or*
Temper appear'd such to us as it really is ; *System of*
if we saw it impossible to remove hence *the Affec-*
any one good or orderly Affection, or in-
troduce any ill or disorderly one, without
drawing on, *in some degree*, that dissolute
State, which *at its height* is confess'd to be
so miserable : 'twou'd then undoubtedly be
confess'd, that since no ill, immoral, or
unjust Action cou'd be committed without
either a new inroad and breach on the
Temper and Passions, or a farther advan-
cing of that Execution already begun ;
whoever did ill, or acted in prejudice of his
Integrity, Good-nature, or Worth, wou'd
of necessity act with greater Cruelty to-
wards himself, than he who scrupled not
to swallow what was poisonous, or who
with his own hands shou'd voluntarily
mangle or wound his outward Form or
Constitution, natural Limbs or Body.



S E C T. III.

SYSTEM
explain'd.

IT has been shewn before, that no Animal can be said properly *to act*, otherwise than thro Affections or Passions, such as are proper to an Animal. For in convulsive Fits, where a Creature strikes either himself or others, 'tis a simple Mechanism, an Engine, or Piece of Clock-work, which acts, and not the Animal.

Spring of
Actions.

WHATSOEVER therefore is done or acted by any Animal *as such*, is done only thro some Affection or Passion, as of Fear, Love, or Hatred moving him.

AND as it is impossible that a weaker Affection shou'd overcome a stronger, so it is impossible but that where the Affections or Passions are strongest in the main, and form in general the most considerable Party, either by their Force or Number; thither the Animal must incline: And according to this *Ballance* he must be govern'd, and led to Action.

Affections,
three
kinds.

THE Affections or Passions which must influence and govern the Animal, are either,

1. THE *natural Affections*, which lead to the Good of THE PUBLICK.

2. OR

2. OR the *Self-affections*, which lead only to the Good of THE PRIVATE.  S. 3.

3. OR such as are neither of these; nor tending either to any Good of THE PUBLICK or PRIVATE; but contrary-wise: and which may therefore be justly styl'd *unnatural Affections*.

So that according as these Affections stand, a Creature must be virtuous or vicious, good or ill.

THE *latter* sort of these Affections, 'tis evident, are wholly vicious. The *two former* may be vicious or virtuous, according to their degree.

It may seem strange, perhaps, to speak of natural Affections as *too strong*, or of Self-affections as *too weak*. But to clear this Difficulty, we must call to mind what has been already explain'd, "That *natural Affection* may, in particular Cases, be excessive, and in an *unnatural degree*:" As when Pity is so overcoming as to destroy its own End, and prevent the Succour and Relief requir'd; or as when Love to the Offspring proves such a Fondness as destroys the Parent, and consequently the Offspring it-self. And notwithstanding it may seem harsh to call that

Book 2. that *unnatural* and *vitious*, which is only an Extreme of some natural and kind Affection; yet 'tis most certain, that where ever any single good Affection of this sort is over-great, it must be injurious to the rest, and detract in some measure from their Force and natural Operation. For a Creature possess'd with such an immoderate Degree of Passion, must of necessity allow too much to that *one*, and too little to *others* of the same Character, and equally natural and useful as to their End. And this must necessarily be the occasion of Partiality and Injustice, whilst only *one Duty* or *natural Part* is earnestly follow'd; and *other Parts* or *Dutys* neglected, which shou'd accompany it, and perhaps take place and be prefer'd.

THIS may well be allow'd true in all other respects; since even RELIGION itself, consider'd as a *Passion*, not of the *selfish* but *nobler* kind, may in some Characters be strain'd beyond its natural Proportion, and be said also to be *in too high a degree*. For as the End of Religion is to render us more perfect, and accomplish'd in all moral Dutys and Performances; if by the height of devout Extasy and Contemplation we are rather disabled in this respect, and render'd more unapt to the real Dutys and Offices of civil Life; it may be said that RELIGION indeed is then *too strong*
in

in us. For how, possibly, can we call this Part 1.
 SUPERSTITION, whilst the Object of the S. 3.
 Devotion is acknowledg'd just, and the
 Faith orthodox? 'Tis only the Excess of
 Zeal, which, in this Case, is so transport-
 ing, as to render the devout Person more
 remiss in secular Affairs, and less concern'd
 for the inferior and temporal Interests of
 Mankind.

Now as in particular Cases, *publick Affection*, on the one hand, may be *too high*; so *private Affection* may, on the other hand, be *too weak*. For if a Creature be self-neglectful, and insensible of Danger; or if he want such a degree of Passion in any kind, as is useful to preserve, sustain, or defend himself; this must certainly be esteem'd vicious, in regard of the Design and End of Nature. She her-self discovers this in her known Method and stated Rule of Operation. 'Tis certain, that her provisory Care and Concern for the whole Animal, must at least be equal to her Concern for a single Part or Member. Now to the several Parts she has given, we see, proper Affections, suitable to their Interest and Security; so that even without our Consciousness, they act in their own Defence, and for their own Benefit and Preservation. Thus *an Eye*, in its natural State, fails not to shut together, of its own accord, unknowingly to us, by a
 Vol. 2. G peculiar

Book 2. peculiar Caution and Timidity; which if it wanted, however we might intend the Preservation of our Eye, we shou'd not in effect be able to preserve it, by any Observation or Forecast of our own. To be wanting therefore in those principal Affections, which respect the Good of the whole Constitution, must be a Vice and Imperfection, as great surely in the principal part (the Soul or Temper) as it is in any of those inferior and subordinate parts to want the self-preserving Affections which are proper to them.

Degrees of Affection.

AND thus the Affections towards private Good become necessary and essential to Goodness. For tho no Creature can be call'd good, or virtuous, merely for possessing these Affections; yet since it is impossible that the publick Good, or Good of the System, can be preserv'd without them; it follows that a Creature really wanting in them, is in reality wanting in some degree to Goodness and natural Rectitude; and may thus be esteem'd vitious and defective.

IT is thus we say of a Creature, in a kind way of Reproof, that he is *too good*; when his Affection towards others is so warm and zealous, as to carry him even beyond his *Part*; or when he really acts beyond it, not thro too warm a Passion of

of that sort, but thro an over-cool one of Part 1.
 another, or thro want of some Self-passion
 to restrain him within due Bounds. S. 3.

IT may be objected here, that the having the natural Affections too strong, (where the Self-affections are overmuch so) or the having the Self-affections defective or weak (where the natural Affections are also weak) may prove upon occasion the only Cause of a Creature's acting honestly and in moral proportion. For, thus, one who is to a fault regardless of his Life, may with the smallest degree of natural Affection do all which can be expected from the highest Pitch of social Love, or zealous Friendship. And thus, on the other hand, a Creature excessively timorous may, by as exceeding a degree of natural Affection, perform whatever the perfectest Courage is able to inspire.

To this it is answer'd, That whenever we arraign any Passion as *too strong*, or complain of any as *too weak*; we must speak with respect to a certain Constitution or *O Economy* of a particular Creature, or Species. For if a Passion, leading to any right end, be only so much the more serviceable and effectual, for being strong; if we may be assur'd that the strength of it will not be the occasion of any distur-

Book 2. bance within, nor of any disproportion between it-self and other Affections; then consequently the Passion, however strong, cannot be condemn'd as vicious. But if to have *all* the Passions in equal proportion with it, be what the Constitution of the Creature cannot bear; so that only *some* Passions are rais'd to this height, whilst *others* are not, nor can possibly be wrought up to the same proportion; then may those strong Passions, tho of the better kind, be call'd excessive. For being in unequal proportion to the others, and causing an *ill Ballance* in the Affection at large, they must of course be the occasion of Inequality in the Conduct, and incline the Party to a wrong moral Practice.

*OEconomy
of the
Passions.*

BUT to shew more particulatly what is meant by the *OEconomy of the Passions*, from Instances in the Species or * Kinds below us. As for the Creatures who have no manner of Power or Means given them by Nature for their defence against Violence, nor any-thing by which they can make themselves formidable to such as injure or offend them; 'tis necessary they shou'd have an extraordinary degree of Fear, but little or no Animosity, such as might cause 'em to make resistance, or incline 'em to delay their Flight. For in this their Safety

* *Infra*, p. 131, 307, 8, 9, &c. And VOL. III. p. 216, 217, &c.

lies, and to this the Passion of Fear is *fer-* Part 1.
viceable, by keeping the Senses on the watch, and holding the Spirits in readiness *S. 3.*
 to give the start.

AND thus *Timorousness*, and an habitual strong Passion of Fear, may be *according to the OEconomy* of a particular Creature, both with respect to himself, and to the rest of his Species. On the other hand, *Courage* may be *contrary to his OEconomy*, and therefore vitious. Even in one and the same Species, this is by Nature differently order'd, with respect to different Sexes, Ages, and Growths. The tamer Creatures of the grazing kind, who live in Herds, are different from the wilder, who herd not, but live in Pairs only, apart from Company, as is natural and futable to their rapacious Life. Yet is there found, even among the former inoffensive kind, a *Courage* proportionable to their Make and Strength. At a time of danger, when the whole Herd flies, the *Bull* alone makes head against the Lion, or whatever other invading Beast of Prey, and shews himself conscious of his *Make*. Even the Female of this kind is arm'd, we see, by Nature, in some degree, to resist Violence; so as not to fly a common Danger. As for a Hind, or Doe, or any other inoffensive and mere defenceless Creature; 'tis no way unnatural or vitious in them, when the Enemy approaches, to

Book 2. desert their Offspring, and fly for Safety.

OEconomy of the Passions. But for Creatures who are able to make Resistance, and are by Nature arm'd offensively; be they of the poorest Insect-kind, such as Bees or Wasps; 'tis natural to 'em to be rous'd with Fury, and at the hazard of their Lives, oppose any Enemy or Invader of their Species. For by this known Passion in the Creature, the Species it-self is secur'd; when by Experience 'tis found that the Creature, tho' unable to repel the Injury, yet voluntarily exposes his Life for the Punishment of the Invader; and suffers not his Kind to be injur'd with Impunity. And of all other Creatures, *Man* is in this Sense the most formidable: since if he thinks it just and exemplary, he may possibly in his own, or in his Country's Cause, revenge an Injury on any-one living; and by throwing away his own Life (if he be resolute to that degree) is almost certain Master of another's, however strongly guarded. Examples of this nature have often serv'd to restrain those in Power, from using it to the utmost Extent, and urging their Inferiors to Extremity.

Measure. Tone.

UPON the whole: It may be said properly to be the same with the Affections or Passions in an Animal-Constitution, as with the Cords or Strings of a Musical Instrument. If these, tho' in ever so just proportion one to another, are strain'd beyond

yond a certain degree, 'tis more than the Part 1.
Instrument will bear: The Lute or Lyre
is abus'd, and its Effect lost. On the o-
ther hand, if while some of the Strings
are duly strain'd, others are not wound up
to their due proportion; then is the Instru-
ment still in disorder, and its Part ill per-
form'd. The several Species of Creatures
are like different sorts of Instruments:
And even in the same Species of Creatures
(as in the same sort of Instrument) *one* is
not intirely like the *other*, nor will the
same Strings fit each. The same degree
of Strength which winds up *one*, and fits
the several Strings to a just Harmony and
Confort, may in *another* burst both the
Strings and Instrument it-self. Thus Men
who have the liveliest Sense, and are the
easiest affected with Pain or Pleasure, have
need of the strongest Influence or Force of
other Affections, such as Tenderness, Love,
Sociableness, Compassion, in order to pre-
serve a right BALLANCE *within*, and to *Balance*
maintain them in their Duty, and in the
just performance of their Part: whilst o-
thers, who are of a cooler Blood, or lower
Key, need not the same Allay or Counter-
part; nor are made by Nature to feel those
tender and indearing Affections in so ex-
quisite a degree.

It might be agreeable, one wou'd think,
to inquire thus into the different Tunings

Book 2. of the Passions, the various Mixtures and
 Allays by which Men become so different
 from one another. For as the highest
 Improvements of Temper are made in
 human kind ; so the greatest Corruptions
 and Degeneracys are discoverable in this
 Race. In the other Species of Creatures
 around us, there is found generally an
 exact Proportionableness, Constancy and
 Regularity in all their Passions and Affec-
 tions ; no failure in the care of the Off-
 spring, or of the Society, to which they
 are united ; no Prostitution of themselves ;
 no Intemperance, or Excess, in any kind.
 The smaller Creatures, who live as it were
 in Citys (as Bees and Ants) continue the
 same Train and Harmony of Life : Nor
 are they ever false to those Affections,
 which move them to operate towards their
 Publick Good. Even those Creatures of
 Prey, who live the farthest out of Socie-
 ty, maintain, we see, such a Conduct to-
 wards one another, as is exactly futable to
 the Good of their own Species. Whilst
 Man, notwithstanding the Assistance of
 Religion, and the Direction of Laws, is
 often found to live in less conformity with
 Nature ; and by means of Religion it-
 self, is often render'd the more barbarous
 and inhuman. Marks are set on Men :
 Distinctions form'd ; Opinions decreed,
 under the severest Penaltys : Antipathys
 instill'd, and Aversions rais'd in Men a-
 gainst

TEM-
PER,

Best or
worst in
Man,

gainst the generality of their own Species. Part 1.
 So that 'tis hard to find in any Region a human Society which has human Laws. S. 3.
 No wonder if in such Societys 'tis so hard to find a Man who lives NATURALLY, and as a Man.

BUT having shewn what is meant by a Passion's being *in too high*, or *in too low* ^{State of the Argument.} a degree; and that, "To have any natural Affection too high, or any Self-affection too low," tho it be often approv'd as *Virtue*, is yet, strictly speaking, a *Vice* and *Imperfection*: we come now to the plainer and more essential part of VICE, and which alone deserves to be consider'd as *such*: that is to say,

1. "WHEN either the publick Affections are weak or deficient:
2. "OR the private and Self-affections too strong.
3. "OR that such Affections arise as are neither of these, nor in any degree tending to the Support either of the publick or private System."

OTHERWISE than *thus*, it is impossible any Creature can be such as we call *ILL* or *VITIOUS*. So that if once we prove

Book 2. prove that it is really not the Creature's Interest to be thus *vitiously* affected, but contrariwise; we shall then have prov'd, "That it is his Interest to be wholly "GOOD and VIRTUOUS:" Since in a wholesom and sound State of his Affections, such as we have describ'd, he cannot possibly be other than sound, *good* and *virtuous*, in his Action and Behaviour.

State of
the Argu-
ment.

OUR Business, therefore, will be, to prove;

I. "THAT *to have the NATURAL, "KINDLY, or GENEROUS AFFEC- "TIONS strong and powerful towards the "Good of the Publick, is to have the chief "Means and Power of Self-enjoyment."* And, "That to want them, is certain Mi-
"sery and Ill."

II. "THAT *to have THE PRIVATE "or SELF-AFFECTIONS too strong, or "beyond their degree of Subordinacy to the "kindly and natural, is also miserable."*

III. AND, "That to have THE UN-
"NATURAL AFFECTIONS (*viz.* such
"as are neither founded on the Interest
"of the Kind, or Publick; nor of the
"private Person, or Creature himself) is
"to be miserable in the highest degree."

PART

PART II.

SECT. I.

TO begin therefore with this Proof, FIRST Proof, from the natural Affections.
 " THAT TO HAVE THE NA-
 " TURAL AFFECTIONS (such
 " as are founded in Love, Complacency,
 " Good-will, and in a Sympathy with the
 " Kind or Species) IS TO HAVE THE
 " CHIEF MEANS AND POWER OF
 " SELF-ENJOYMENT: *And* THAT TO
 " WANT THEM IS CERTAIN MISERY
 " AND ILL."

WE may inquire, first, what those are,
 which we call *Pleasures* or *Satisfactions*; Pleasures of the BODY and MIND.
 from whence Happiness is generally com-
 puted. They are (according to the com-
 mon distinction) *Satisfactions* and *Plea-
 sures* either of *the Body*, or of *the Mind*.

THAT *the latter of these Satisfactions* The latter preferable.
are the greatest, is allow'd by most People,
 and may be prov'd by this: That when-
 ever the Mind, having conceiv'd a high
 Opi-

Book 2. Opinion of the Worth of any Action or Behaviour, has receiv'd the strongest Impression of this sort, and is wrought up to the highest pitch or degree of Passion towards the Subject ; at such time it sets it-self above all bodily Pain as well as Pleasure, and can be no-way diverted from its purpose by Flattery or Terror of any kind. Thus we see *Indians, Barbarians, Malefactors*, and even the most execrable *Villains*, for the sake of a particular Gang or Society, or thro some cherish'd Notion or Principle of Honour or Gallantry, Revenge, or Gratitude, embrace any manner of Hardship, and defy Torments and Death. Whereas, on the other hand, a Person being plac'd in all the happy Circumstances of outward Enjoyment, surrounded with every thing which can allure or charm the Sense, and being then actually in the very moment of such a pleasing Indulgence ; yet no sooner is there any thing amiss *within*, no sooner has he conceiv'd any *internal Ail* or *Disorder*, any thing *inwardly* vexatious or distemper'd, than instantly his Enjoyment ceases, the pleasure of Sense is at an end ; and every means of that sort becomes ineffectual, and is rejected as uneasy, and subject to give Distaste.

Desirence.

THE Pleasures of the Mind being allow'd, therefore, superior to those of the Body ;

Body ; it follows, “ That whatever can Part 2.
 “ create in any intelligent Being a constant S. 1.
 “ flowing Series or Train of mental Enjoy-
 “ ments, or Pleasures of the Mind, is more
 “ considerable to his Happiness, than that
 “ which can create to him a like constant
 “ Course or Train of sensual Enjoyments,
 “ or Pleasures of the Body.”

Now the mental Enjoyments are either Mental
Enjoy-
ments,
substance.
actually the very natural Affections them-
selves in their immediate Operation : Or
 they wholly in a manner *proceed from*
them, and are no other than their Effects.


If so ; it follows, that the natural Af-
 fections duly establish'd in a rational Crea-
 ture, being the only means which can pro-
 cure him a constant Series or Succession of
 the mental Enjoyments, they are the only
 means which can procure him a certain
 and solid *Happiness.*

NOW, in the first place, to explain, Energy of
natural
Affections.
 “ How much *the natural Affections are in*
 “ *themselves the highest Pleasures and En-*
 “ *joyments :*” There shou'd methinks be
 little need of proving this to any-one of
 human Kind, who has ever known the Con-
 dition of the Mind under a lively Affection
 of Love, Gratitude, Bounty, Generosity,
 Pity, Succour, or whatever else is of a so-
 cial

Book 2. cial or friendly fort. He who has ever so little Knowledge of human Nature, is sensible what pleasure the Mind perceives when it is touch'd in this generous way. The difference we find between Solitude and Company, between a common Company and that of Friends; the reference of almost all our Pleasures to mutual Converse, and the dependence they have on Society either present or imagin'd; all these are sufficient Proofs in our behalf.

*Energy of
natural
Affections.*

How much the social Pleasures are superior to any other, may be known by visible Tokens and Effects. The very outward Features, the Marks and Signs which attend this sort of Joy, are expressive of a more intense, clear, and undisturb'd Pleasure, than those which attend the Satisfaction of Thirst, Hunger, and other ardent Appetites. But more particularly still may this Superiority be known, from the actual Prevalence and Ascendency of this sort of Affection over all besides. Wherever it presents it-self with any advantage, it silences and appeases every other Motion of Pleasure. No Joy, merely of Sense, can be a Match for it. Whoever is Judge of *both* the Pleasures, will ever give the preference to *the former*. But to be able to judge of both, 'tis necessary to have a Sense of each. The honest Man indeed can judge of *sensual Pleasure*, and knows its utmost

utmost Force. For neither is his Taste, or Part 2.
Sense, the duller; but, on the contrary, 
the more intense and clear, on the account S. I.
of his Temperance, and a moderate Use
of Appetite. But the immoral and profligate Man can by no means be allow'd a
good Judg of *social Pleasure*, to which he
is so mere a Stranger by his Nature.

NOR is it any Objection here: that in
many Natures the good Affection, tho really present, is found to be of insufficient
force. For where it is not *in its natural degree*, 'tis the same indeed as if it *were not*, or had *never been*. The less there is
of this good Affection in any untoward Creature, the greater the wonder is, that
it shou'd *at any time* prevail; as in the very worst of Creatures it sometimes will. And
if it prevails but for *once*, in any *single Instance*; it shews evidently, that if the
Affection were thorowly experienc'd or known, it wou'd prevail *in all*.

THUS *the* CHARM of kind Affection
is superior to all other Pleasure: since it
has the power of drawing from every o-
ther Appetite or Inclination. And thus
in the Case of Love to the Offspring,
and a thousand other Instances, *the Charm*
is found to operate so strongly on the
Temper, as, in the midst of other Temp-
tations, to render it susceptible of this
Passion

Book 2. Passion alone ; which remains as the *Master-Pleasure* and *Conqueror* of the rest.

*Energy of
natural
Affections.*

THERE is no-one who, by the least progress in Science or Learning, has come to know barely the Principles of *Mathematics*, but has found, that in the exercise of his Mind on the Discoverys he there makes, tho merely of speculative Truths, he receives a Pleasure and Delight superior to that of Sense. When we have thoroughly search'd into the nature of this contemplative Delight, we shall find it of a kind which relates not in the least to any private Interest of the Creature, nor has for its Object any Self-good or Advantage of the private System. The Admiration, Joy, or Love, turns wholly upon what is exterior, and foreign to our-selves. And tho the reflected Joy or Pleasure, which arises from the notice of this Pleasure once perceiv'd, may be interpreted a *Self-passion*, or *interested Regard* : yet the original Satisfaction can be no other than what results from the Love of Truth, Proportion, Order, and Symmetry, in the Things without. If this be the Case, the Passion ought in reality to be rank'd with *natural Affection*. For having no Object within the compass of the private System ; it must either be esteem'd superfluous and *unnatural* (as having no tendency towards the Advantage or Good of any

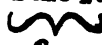
any thing in Nature) or it must be judg'd Part 2.
 to be, what it truly is, * " A natural Joy
 " in the Contemplation of those *Numbers*, §. 1.
 " that *Harmony*, *Proportion*, and *Concord*,
 " which supports the universal Nature, and
 " is essential in the Constitution and Form
 " of every particular Species, or Order of
 " Beings."

BUT this speculative Pleasure, however considerable and valuable it may be, or however superior to any Motion of mere Sense; must yet be far surpass'd by *virtuous Motion*, and the *Exercise of Benignity and Goodness*; where, together with the most delightful Affection of the Soul, there is join'd a pleasing Assent and Approbation of the Mind to what is acted in this good Disposition and honest Bent. For where is there on Earth a fairer Matter of Speculation, a goodlier View or Contemplation, than that of a *beautiful, proportion'd, and becoming Action*? Or what is there relating to us, of which the Conscioufness and Memory is more solidly and lastingly entertaining?

WE may observe that in the Passion of Love between the Sexes, where, together with the Affection of a *vulgar* sort, there is a mixture of the *kind and friendly*, the Sense or Feeling of this *latter* is

Book 2. in reality superior to the *former*; since
 Energy of natural Affections. often thro this Affection, and for the sake
 of the Person belov'd, the greatest Hard-
 ships in the World have been submitted
 to, and even Death it-self voluntarily im-
 brac'd, without any expected *Compensa-
 tion*. For where shou'd the Ground of
 such an Expectation lie? Not *here*, in *this
 World* surely; for Death puts an end to all.
 Nor yet *hereafter*, in *any other*: for who
 has ever thought of providing a Heaven or
 future Recompence for the suffering Virtue
 of Lovers?

WE may observe, withal, in favour of
 the natural Affections, that it is not only
 when Joy and Sprightliness are mix'd with
 them, that they carry a real Enjoyment
 above that of the sensual kind. The very
 Disturbances which belong to natural Af-
 fection, tho they may be thought wholly
 contrary to Pleasure, yield still a Content-
 ment and Satisfaction greater than the
 Pleasures of indulg'd Sense. And where a
 Series or continu'd Succession of the ten-
 der and kind Affections can be carry'd
 on, even thro Fears, Horrors, Sorrows,
 Grievs; the Emotion of the Soul is still
 agreeable. We continue pleas'd even with
 this melancholy Aspect or Sense of Vir-
 tue. Her Beauty supports it-self under
 a Cloud, and in the midst of surrounding
 Calamitys. For thus, when by mere Illu-
 sion,

sion, as in a *Tragedy*, the Passions of this Part 2.
 kind are skilfully excited in us; we prefer 
 the Entertainment to any other of equal S. 1.
 duration. We find by our-selves, that the
 moving our Passions in this mournful way,
 the engaging them in behalf of Merit and
 Worth, and the exerting whatever we
 have of social Affection, and human Sym-
 pathy, is of the highest Delight; and af-
 fords a greater Enjoyment in the way of
Thought and *Sentiment*, than any thing
 besides can do in a way of *Sense* and *com-*
mon Appetite. And after this manner it
 appears, "How much the mental Enjoy-
 "ments are actually the very natural Af-
 "fections themselves."


NOW, in the next place, to explain, *Effects of*
 "How they proceed from them, as their *natural*
 "natural *Effects*:" we may consider first, *Affection.*
 That the EFFECTS of Love or kind Af-
 fection, in a way of mental Pleasure, are,
 "An Enjoyment of Good by Communication.
 "A receiving it, as it were, by Reflection,
 "or by way of Participation in the Good
 "of others." And "A pleasing Con-
 "sciousness of the actual Love, merited
 "Esteem or Approbation of others."

How considerable a part of Happiness
 arises from the former of these *Effects*, will
 be easily apprehended by one who is not

Book 2. exceedingly ill-natur'd. It will be consider'd how many the Pleasures are, of *sharing Contentment and Delight with others*; of receiving it in Fellowship and Company; and gathering it, in a manner, from the pleas'd and happy States of those around us, from accounts and relations of such Happineffes, from the very Countenances, Gestures, Voices and Sounds, even of Creatures foreign to our Kind, whose Signs of Joy and Contentment we can any-way discern. So insinuating are these Pleasures of Sympathy, and so widely diffus'd thro our whole Lives, that there is hardly such a thing as Satisfaction or Contentment, of which they make not an essential part.

*Effects of
natural
Affection.*

As for that other *Effect* of social Love, viz. *the Consciousness of merited Kindness or Esteem*; 'tis not difficult to perceive how much this avails in mental Pleasure, and constitutes the chief Enjoyment and Happiness of those who are, in the narrowest sense, *voluptuous*. How natural is it for the most selfish among us, to be continually drawing some sort of satisfaction from a Character, and pleasing our-selves in the Fancy of deserv'd Admiration and Esteem? For tho it be mere Fancy, we endeavour still to believe it Truth, and flatter our-selves, all we can, with the Thought of *Merit* of some kind, and the Persuasion
of

of our deserving well from some few at Part 2.
 least, with whom we happen to have a 
 more intimate and familiar Commerce. §. 1.

WHAT Tyrant is there, what Robber, or open Violater of the Laws of Society, who has not a Companion, or some particular Set, either of his own Kindred, or such as he calls Friends ; with whom he gladly shares his Good ; in whose Welfare he delights ; and whose Joy and Satisfaction he makes *his own* ? What Person in the world is there, who receives not some Impressions from the Flattery or Kindness of such as are familiar with him ? 'Tis to this soothing Hope and Expectation of Friendship, that almost all our Actions have some reference. 'Tis this which goes thro our whole Lives, and mixes it-self even with most of our Vices. Of this, *Vanity*, *Ambition*, and *Luxury*, have a share ; and many other Disorders of our Life partake. Even the unchasteft *Love* borrows largely from this Source. So that were Pleasure to be computed in the same way as other things commonly are ; it might properly be said, that out of these two Branches (*viz. Community or Participation in the Pleasures of others, and Belief of meriting well from others*) wou'd arise more than nine Tenths of whatever is enjoy'd in Life. And thus in the main Sum of Happiness, there is scarce a single Article, but what
 H 3 derives

Book 2. derives it-self from social Love, and depends immediately on the natural and kind Affections.

Now such as CAUSES are, such must be their EFFECTS. And therefore as *natural Affection* or *social Love* is perfect, or imperfect; so must be *the Content* and *Happiness* depending on it.

*Partial
Affection
examin'd*

BUT lest any shou'd imagine with themselves that an *inferior* Degree of natural Affection, or an *imperfect partial* Regard of this sort, can supply the place of an *intire, sincere, and truly moral* one; lest a small Tincture of social Inclination shou'd be thought sufficient to answer the End of Pleasure in Society, and give us that Enjoyment of *Participation* and *Community* which is so essential to our Happiness; we may consider first, That PARTIAL AFFECTION, or social Love *in part*, without regard to a compleat Society or *Whole*, is in it-self an Inconsistency, and implies an absolute Contradiction. Whatever Affection we have towards any thing besides *our-selves*; if it be not of the *natural sort* towards the System, or Kind; it must be, of all other Affections, the most *dissociable*, and destructive of the Enjoyments of Society: If it be really of the natural sort, and apply'd only to some *one Part* of Society,

ciety, or of a Species, but not to the Species or Society *it-self*; there can be no more account given of it, than of the most odd, capricious, or humourfom Passion which may arise. The Person, therefore, who is conscious of this Affection, can be conscious of no *Merit* or *Worth* on the account of it. Nor can the Persons on whom this capricious Affection has chanc'd to fall, be in any manner secure of its Continuance or Force. As it has no Foundation or Establishment *in Reason*; so it must be easily removable, and subject to alteration, *without Reason*. Now the Variableness of such sort of Passion, which depends solely on Capriciousness and Humour, and undergoes the frequent Successions of alternate Hatred and Love, Aversion and Inclination, must of necessity create continual Disturbance and Disgust, give an allay to what is immediately enjoy'd in the way of Friendship and Society, and in the end extinguish, in a manner, the very Inclination towards Friendship and human Commerce. Whereas, on the other hand, **INTIRE AFFECTION** (from whence *Integrity* has its name) as it is answerable to it-self, proportionable, and rational; so it is irrefragable, solid, and durable. And as in the case of *Partiality*, or vitious Friendship, which has no rule or order, every Reflection of the Mind necessarily makes to its disadvantage, and lessens the Enjoyment;

Part 2.

§. 1.

Book 2. so in the case of *Integrity*, the Consciousness of just Behaviour towards Mankind in general, casts a good reflection on each friendly Affection in particular, and raises the Enjoyment of Friendship still the higher; in the way of *Community* or *Participation* above-mention'd.

*Partial
Affection.*

AND in the next place, as PARTIAL AFFECTION is fitted only to a short and slender Enjoyment of those Pleasures of *Sympathy* or *Participation with others*; so neither is it able to derive any considerable Enjoyment from that other principal Branch of human Happiness, *viz. Consciousness of the actual or merited Esteem of others*. From whence shou'd this *Esteem* arise? The *Merit*, surely, must in it-self be mean, whilst the Affection is so precarious and uncertain. What Trust can there be to a mere *casual Inclination* or *capricious Liking*? Who can depend on such a Friendship as is founded on no moral Rule, but fantastickly assign'd to some single Person, or small *Part* of Mankind, exclusive of Society, and *the Whole*?

It may be consider'd, withal, as a thing impossible; that they who esteem or love by any other Rule than that of *Virtue*, shou'd place their Affection on such Subjects as they can long esteem or love. 'Twill be hard for them, in the number of
their

their so belov'd Friends, to find any, in Part 2. whom they can heartily rejoice; or whose reciprocal Love or Esteem they can sincerely prize, and enjoy. Nor can those Pleasures be sound or lasting, which are gather'd from a Self-flattery, and false Persuasion of the Esteem and Love of others, who are incapable of any sound Esteem or Love. It appears therefore how much the Men of narrow or *partial* Affection must be Losers in this sense, and of necessity fall short in this second principal part of mental Enjoyment. S. 1.

MEAN while *intire Affection* has all the opposite advantages. It is equal, constant, accountable to it-self, ever satisfactory, and pleasing. It gains Applause and Love from the *best*; and in all disinterested cases, from the very *worst* of Men. We may say of it, with justice, that it carries with it a Consciousness of merited Love and Approbation from all Society, from all intelligent Creatures, and from whatever is original to all other Intelligence. And if there be in Nature any such *Original*; we may add, that the Satisfaction which attends *intire Affection*, is full and noble, in proportion to its *final Object*, which contains all Perfection; according to the Sense of *Theism* above-noted. For this, as has been shewn, is the result of *Virtue*. And to have this

INTIRE AFFECTION OR INTEGRITY
of

Book 2. of Mind, is *to live according to Nature*, and the Dictates and Rules of *supreme Wisdom*. This is Morality, Justice, Piety, and natural Religion.

Intire Affection.

BUT lest this Argument shou'd appear perhaps too *scholastically* stated, and in Terms and Phrases, which are not of familiar use; we may try whether possibly we can set it yet in a plainer light.

LET any-one, then, consider well those Pleasures which he receives either in private Retirement, Contemplation, Study, and Converse *with himself*; or in Mirth, Jollity, and Entertainment, with *others*; and he will find, That they are wholly founded in *An easy Temper, free of Harshness, Bitterness, or Distaste*; and in *A Mind or Reason well compos'd, quiet, easy within it-self, and such as can freely bear its own Inspection and Review*. Now such A MIND, and such A TEMPER, which fit and qualify for the Enjoyment of the Pleasures mention'd, must of necessity be owing to the *natural and good Affections*.

TEM-
PER.

AS to what relates to TEMPER, it may be consider'd thus. There is no State of outward Prosperity, or flowing Fortune, where *Inclination* and *Desire* are always satisfy'd, *Fancy* and *Humour* pleas'd.
There

There are almost hourly some Impediments or Crosses to the Appetite; some Accidents or other *from without*; or something *from within*, to check the licentious Course of the indulg'd Affections. They are not always to be satisfy'd by mere Indulgence. And when a Life is guided by *Fancy* only, there is sufficient Ground of Contrariety and Disturbance. The very ordinary Lassitudes, Uneasinesses, and Defects of Disposition in the soundest Body; the interrupted Course of the Humours, or Spirits in the healthiest People; and the accidental Disorders common to every Constitution, are sufficient, we know, on many occasions, to breed Uneasiness and Distaste. And this, in time, must grow into a Habit; where there is nothing to oppose its progress, and hinder its prevailing on the Temper. Now the only sound Opposite to *ILL HUMOUR*, is *natural and kind Affection*. For we may observe, that when the Mind, upon reflection, resolves at any time to suppress this Disturbance already risen in the Temper, and sets about this reforming Work with heartiness, and in good earnest; it can no otherwise accomplish the Undertaking, than by introducing into the affectionate Part some gentle Feeling of the social and friendly kind; some enlivening Motion of Kindness, Fellowship, Complacency or Love, to allay and convert that contrary Motion of Impatience and Discontent.

Book 2.



Temper.

IF it be said perhaps, that in the case before us, *Religious Affection* or *Devotion* is a sufficient and proper Remedy ; we answer, That 'tis according as the Kind may happily prove. For if it be of the pleasant and chearful sort, 'tis of the very kind of *natural Affection* it-self : if it be of the * dismal or fearful sort ; if it brings along with it any Affection opposite to Manhood, Generosity, Courage, or Free-thought ; there will be nothing gain'd by this Application : and the *Remedy* will, in the issue, be undoubtedly found *worse than the Disease*. The severest Reflections on our *Duty*, and the Consideration merely of what is *by Authority* and *under Penalties* enjoind, will not by any means serve to calm us on this occasion. The more dismal our Thoughts are on such a Subject, the worse our Temper will be, and the readier to discover it-self in Harshness, and Austerity. If, perhaps, by Compulsion, or thro any Necessity or Fear incumbent, a different Carriage be at any time affected, or different Maxims own'd ; the Practice at the bottom will be still the same. If *the Countenance* be compos'd ; *the Heart*, however, will not be chang'd. The ill Passion may for the time be with-held from breaking into Action ; but will not be subdu'd, or in

* VOL. I. p. 32, 33, &c. And VOL. III. p. 115, 116, 124, ——— 128.

the least debilitated against the next occasion. So that in such a Breast as this, whatever *Devotion* there may be ; 'tis likely there will in time be little of *an easy Spirit*, or *good Temper* remaining ; and consequently few and slender Enjoyments of *a mental kind*.

Part 2.

S. 1.

IF it be objected, on the other hand, that tho in melancholy Circumstances ill Humour may prevail, yet in a Course of outward Prosperity, and in the height of Fortune, there can nothing probably occur which shou'd thus sour *the Temper*, and give it such disrelish as is suggested ; we may consider, that the most humour'd and indulg'd State is apt to receive the most disturbance from every Disappointment or smallest Ail. And if Provocations are easiest rais'd, and the Passions of Anger, Offence, and Enmity, are found the highest in the most indulg'd State of Will and Humour ; there is still the greater need of a Supply from *social Affection*, to preserve *the Temper* from running into Savageness and Inhumanity. And this, the Case of Tyrants, and most unlimited Potentates, may sufficiently verify and demonstrate.

NOW as to the other part of our Consideration, which relates to a MIND or Reason well compos'd and easy within it-self ;
upon

MIND.

Book 2. upon what account this Happiness may be thought owing to *natural Affection*, we may possibly resolve our-selves, after this manner. It will be acknowledg'd that a Creature, such as Man, who from several degrees of Reflection has risen to that Capacity which we call Reason and Understanding; must in the very use of this his reasoning Faculty, be forc'd to receive Reflections back into his Mind of what passes in it-self, as well as in the Affections, or Will; in short, of whatsoever relates to his Character, Conduct, or Behaviour amidst his Fellow-Creatures, and in Society. Or shou'd he be of himself unapt; there are others ready to remind him, and refresh his Memory, in this way of Criticism. We have all of us Remembrancers enow to help us in this Work. Nor are the greatest Favourites of Fortune exempted from this Task of Self-inspection. Even Flattery it-self, by making the View agreeable, renders us more attentive this way, and insnares us in the Habit. The vainer any Person is, the more he has his Eye inwardly fix'd upon himself; and is, after a certain manner, employ'd in this home-Survey. And when a true Regard to our-selves cannot oblige us to this Inspection, a false Regard to others, and a Fondness for Reputation raises a watchful Jealousy, and furnishes us sufficiently with Acts of Reflection on our own Character and Conduct.

IN whatever manner we consider of this, we shall find still, that every reasoning or reflecting Creature is, by his Nature, forc'd to endure the *Review* of his own Mind, and Actions; and to have Representations of himself, and his inward Affairs, constantly passing before him, obvious to him, and revolving in his Mind. Now as nothing can be more grievous than this is, to one who has thrown off *natural Affection*; so nothing can be more delightful to one who has preserv'd it with sincerity.

THERE are two Things, which to a *Conscience*, rational Creature must be horridly offensive and grievous; *viz.* "To have the
" Reflection in his Mind of any *unjust*
" Action or Behaviour, which he knows
" to be naturally *odious* and *ill-deserving* :
" Or, of any foolish Action or Behaviour,
" which he knows to be prejudicial to his
" own *Interest* or *Happiness*."

THE former of these is alone properly call'd CONSCIENCE; whether in a moral, or religious Sense. For to have Awe and Terror of the Deity, does not, of itself, imply Conscience. No one is esteem'd the more conscientious for the fear of evil Spirits, Conjurations, Enchantments; or whatever may proceed from any unjust, capricious, or devilish Nature. Now to fear
GOD

Book 2. GOD any otherwise than as in consequence of some justly blameable and imputable Act, is to fear a *devilish* Nature, not a *divine* one. Nor does the Fear of Hell, or a thousand *Terrors* of the DEITY imply Conscience; unless where there is an Apprehension of what is *wrong, odious, morally deform'd, and ill-deserving*. And where this is the Case, there *Conscience* must have effect, and Punishment of necessity be apprehended; even tho it be not expressly threaten'd.

*Moral
Conscience.*

AND thus *religious Conscience* supposes *moral or natural Conscience*. And tho the former be understood to carry with it the Fear of divine Punishment; it has its force however from the apprehended moral Deformity and Odioufness of any Act, with respect purely to the Divine Presence, and the natural Veneration due to such a suppos'd Being. For in such a Presence, the Shame of Villany or Vice must have its force, independently on that further Apprehension of the magisterial Capacity of such a Being, and his Dispensation of particular Rewards or Punishments in a future State.

It has been already said, that no Creature can maliciously and intentionally *do ill*, without being sensible, at the same time, that he *deserves ill*. And in this respect, every sensible Creature may be said to have
Conscience.

Conscience. For with all Mankind, and all intelligent Creatures, this must ever hold, Part 2.
 “ That *what* they know they deserve from S. 1.
 “ every-one, *that* they necessarily must fear
 “ and expect from all.” And thus Suspi-
 cions and ill Apprehensions must arise, with
 Terror both of Men and of *the* DEITY.
 But besides this, there must in every ratio-
 nal Creature, be yet farther *Conscience* ;
viz. from Sense of *Deformity in what is*
thus ill-deserving and unnatural: and from
a consequent Shame or Regret of incurring
what is odious, and moves Aversion.

THERE scarcely is, or can be any Crea-
 ture, whom Consciousness of Villany, as
such merely, does not at all offend ; nor any
 thing opprobrious or heinously imputable,
 move, or affect. If there be such a one ;
 'tis evident he must be absolutely indiffe-
 rent towards moral Good or Ill. If this
 indeed be his Case ; 'twill be allow'd he
 can be no-way capable of natural Affec-
 tion : If not of that, then neither of any
 social Pleasure, or mental Enjoyment, as
 shewn above ; but on the contrary, he
 must be subject to all manner of horrid,
 unnatural, and ill Affection. So that to
 want CONSCIENCE, or *natural Sense of*
the Odiousness of Crime and Injustice, is to
 be most of all miserable in Life : but where
Conscience, or *Sense* of this sort, remains ;
 there, consequently, whatever is committed

Book 2. against it, must of necessity, by means of
 ~~~~~ Reflection, as we have shewn, be conti-  
 Moral nually shameful, grievous and offensive.  
 Conscience.

A MAN who in a Passion happens to kill his Companion, relents immediately on the sight of what he has done. His Revenge is chang'd into Pity, and his Hatred turn'd against himself. And this merely by the Power of the Object. On this account he suffers Agonys; the Subject of this continually occurs to him; and of this he has a constant ill Remembrance and displeasing Consciousness. If on the other side, we suppose him *not* to relent or suffer any real Concern or Shame; then, either he has no Sense of the Deformity of the Crime and Injustice, no natural Affection, and consequently no Happiness or Peace within: or if he has any Sense of moral Worth or Goodness, it must be of a perplex'd, and contradictory kind. He must pursue an inconsistent Notion, idolize some  
 False Con- *false Species* of Virtue, and affect as noble, science. gallant, or worthy, that which is irrational and absurd. And how tormenting this must be to him, is easy to conceive. For never can such a *Phantom* as this be reduc'd to any certain Form. Never can this PROTEUS of Honour be held steady, to one Shape. The Pursuit of it can only be vexatious and distracting. There is nothing beside real Virtue (as has been shewn) which

which can possibly hold any proportion to Esteem, Approbation, or good Conscience. And he who, being led by false Religion or prevailing Custom, has learnt to esteem or admire any thing as Virtue which is not really such; must either thro the Inconsistency of such an Esteem, and the perpetual Immoralities occasion'd by it, come at last to lose all Conscience, and so be miserable in the worst way: or, if he retains any Conscience at all, it must be of a kind never satisfactory, or able to bestow Content. For 'tis impossible that a cruel Enthusiast, or *Bigot*, a Persecutor, a Murderer, a *Bravo*, a Pirate, or any Villain of less degree, who is false to the Society of Mankind in general, and contradicts natural Affection; thou'd have any fix'd Principle at all, any real Standard or Measure by which he can regulate his Esteem, or any solid Reason by which to form his Approbation of *any one* moral Act. And thus the more he sets up *Honour*, or advances *Zeal*; the worse he renders his Nature, and the more detestable his Character. The more he engages in the Love or Admiration of any Action or Practice, as great and glorious, which is in it-self morally ill and vitious; the more Contradiction and Self-disapprobation he must incur. For there being nothing more certain than this,

“ That no natural Affection can be contradicted, nor no unnatural one advanc'd,

Book 2. " without a prejudice in some degree to all  
 ~~~~~ " natural Affection in general : " it must  
False Con- follow, " That inward Deformity growing
science, " greater, by the Incouragement of unna-
 " tural Affection ; there must be so much
 " the more Subject for dissatisfactory Re-
 " flection, the more any false Principle of
 " Honour, any false Religion, or Supersti-
 " tion prevails."

Causes Re- So that whatever Notions of this kind
proach are cherish'd ; or whatever Character affec-
from true. ted, which is contrary to moral Equity,
 and leads to Inhumanity, thro a *false Con-*
science, or *wrong Sense of Honour,* serves
 only to bring a Man the more under the lash
 of *real* and *just Conscience,* Shame, and
 Self-reproach. Nor can any-one, who, by
 any pretended Authority, commits one
 single Immorality, be able to satisfy him-
 self with any Reason, why he shou'd not
 at another time be carry'd further, into all
 manner of Villany ; such perhaps as he e-
 ven abhors to think of. And this is a Re-
 proach which a Mind must of necessity
 make to it-self upon the least Violation of
 natural Conscience ; in doing what is *mo-*
rally deform'd, and *ill-deserving* ; tho war-
 ranted by any Example or Precedent a-
 mongst Men, or by any suppos'd Injunction
 or Command of higher Powers.

Now

Now as for that other part of Conscience, viz. the remembrance of *what was at any time unreasonably and foolishly done, in prejudice of one's real Interest or Happiness*: This dissatisfactory Reflection must follow still and have effect, wheresoever there is a Sense of moral Deformity, contracted by Crime, and Injustice. For even where there is no Sense of moral Deformity, as *such merely*; there must be still a Sense of the ill Merit of it with respect to God and Man. Or tho there were a possibility of excluding for ever all Thoughts or Suspensions of any superior Powers, yet considering that this Insensibility towards moral Good or Ill implies a total Defect in natural Affection, and that this Defect can by no Dissimulation be conceal'd; 'tis evident that a Man of this unhappy Character must suffer a very sensible Loss in the Friendship, Trust, and Confidence of other Men; and consequently must suffer in his Interest and outward Happiness. Nor can the Sense of this Disadvantage fail to occur to him; when he sees, with Regret, and Envy, the better and more grateful Terms of Friendship, and Esteem, on which better People live with the rest of Mankind. Even therefore where natural Affection is wanting; 'tis certain still, that by Immorality, necessarily happening

§. 1.

Conscience
from Interest.

Book 2. pening thro want of such Affection, there must be disturbance from Conscience of this sort, *viz.* from *Sense of what is committed imprudently, and contrary to real Interest and Advantage.*

Conclusion
drawn
from the
MEN-
TAL
PLEA-
SURES.

FROM all this we may easily conclude, how much our Happiness depends on *natural and good Affection*. For if the chief Happiness be from the MENTAL PLEASURES; and the chief *mental Pleasures* are such as we have describ'd, and are founded in *natural Affection*; it follows, "That to
" *have the natural Affections, is to have*
" *the chief Means and Power of Self-en-*
" *joyment, the highest Possession and Hap-*
" *piness of Life.*"

Pleasures
of the
SENSE,

Dependent
also on na-
tural Af-
fection.

NOW as to the *Pleasures of the BODY*, and the *Satisfactions belonging to mere SENSE*; 'tis evident, they cannot possibly have their Effect, or afford any valuable Enjoyment, otherwise than by the means of *social and natural Affection*.

Vulgar
Epicurism.

To *live well*, has no other meaning with some People, than to *eat and drink well*. And methinks 'tis an unwary Concession we make in favour of these pretended *good Livers*, when we join with 'em, in honouring their way of Life with the Title of *living fast*. As if they liv'd the fastest who

who took the greatest Pains to enjoy least Part 2.
 of Life : For if our Account of Happiness
 be right ; the greatest Enjoyments in Life
 are such as these Men pass over in their
 haste, and have scarce ever allow'd them-
 selves the liberty of tasting.

S. 1.
*Pleasures
 of the
 Senses.*

BUT as considerable a Part of Volup-
 tuousness as is founded in *the Palat* ; and
 as notable as the Science is, which depends
 on it ; one may justly presume that the
 Ostentation of Elegance, and a certain
 Emulation and Study how to excel in this
 sumptuous Art of Living, goes very far in
 the raising such a high Idea of it, as is ob-
 serv'd among the Men of Pleasure. For
 were the Circumstances of a Table and
 Company, Equipages, Services, and the rest
 of the Management withdrawn ; there
 wou'd be hardly left any Pleasure worth
 acceptance, even in the Opinion of the
 most debauch'd themselves.

*Imagina-
 tion, Fan-
 cy.*

THE very Notion of a *Debauch* (which
 is a Sally into whatever can be imagin'd of
 Pleasure and Voluptuousness) carrys with
 it a plain reference to Society, or Fellow-
 ship. It may be call'd a *Surfeit*, or *Excess*
of Eating and Drinking, but hardly a *De-*
bauch of that kind, when the Excess is
 committed separately, out of all Society,
 or Fellowship. And one who abuses him-
 self in this way, is often call'd a *Sot*, but

*A De-
 bauch.*

Book 2. never a *Debaucher*. The Courtizans, and even the commonest of Women, who live by Prostitution, know very well how necessary it is, that every-one whom they entertain with their Beauty, shou'd believe there are Satisfaction reciprocal ; and that Pleasures are no less *given* than *receiv'd*. And were this Imagination to be wholly taken away, there wou'd be hardly any of the grosser sort of Mankind, who wou'd not perceive their remaining Pleasure to be of slender Estimation.

Pleasures
of the
Sense,
Women,

Who is there can well or long enjoy any thing, when *alone*, and abstracted perfectly, even in his very Mind and Thought, from every thing belonging to Society ? Who wou'd not, on such Terms as these, be presently cloy'd by any sensual Indulgence ? Who wou'd not soon grow uneasy with his Pleasure, however exquisite, till he had found means to impart it, and make it *truly pleasant* to him, by communicating, and sharing it at least with some *one* single Person ? Let Men imagine what they please ; let 'em suppose themselves ever so selfish ; or desire ever so much to follow the Dictates of that narrow Principle, by which they wou'd bring Nature under restraint : Nature will break out ; and in Agonys, Disquiets, and a distemper'd State, demonstrate evidently the

the ill Consequence of such Violence, the Part 2.
 Absurdity of such a Device, and the Punish-
 ment which belongs to such a monstrous S. 1.
 and horrid Endeavour.

THUS, therefore, not only the *Pleasures of the Mind*, but even those of the *Body*, depend on natural Affection: in-
 much that where this is wanting, they
 not only lose their Force, but are in a
 manner converted into Uneasiness and Dis-
 gust. The Sensations which shou'd na-
 turally afford Contentment and Delight,
 produce rather Discontent and Sourness,
 and breed a Wearisomness and Restlessness
 in the Disposition. This we may per-
 ceive by the perpetual Inconstancy, and
 Love of Change, so remarkable in those
 who have nothing communicative or
 friendly in their Pleasures. *Good Fellow-
 ship*, in its abus'd Sense, seems indeed to
 have something more constant and deter-
 mining. The Company supports the Hu-
 mour. 'Tis the same in *Love*. A certain
 Tenderness and Generosity of Affection
 supports the Passion, which otherwise
 wou'd instantly be chang'd. The per-
 fectest Beauty cannot, of it-self, retain, or
 fix it. And that Love which has no
 other Foundation, but relies on this exte-
 rior kind, is soon turn'd into Aversion.
 Satiety, perpetual Disgust, and Feverish-
 ness of Desire, attend those who passio-
 nately

Book 2. nately study Pleasure. They best enjoy it, who study to regulate their Passions. And by this they will come to know how absolute an Incapacity there is in any thing sensual to please, or give contentment, where it depends not on something friendly or social, something conjoin'd; and in affinity with *kind or natural Affection*.

*Pleasures
of the
Sense.*

*Balance of
the Affec-
tions.*

BUT E'ER we conclude this Article of *social or natural Affection*, we may take a general View of it, and bring it, once for all, into the Scale; to prove what kind of * **BALLANCE** it helps to make *with-in*; and what the Consequence may be, of its *Deficiency*, or *light Weight*.

THERE is no-one of ever so little Understanding in what belongs to a human Constitution, who knows not that without Action, Motion, and Employment, *the Body* languishes, and is oppress'd; its Nourishment turns to Disease; the Spirits, unemploy'd abroad, help to consume the Parts within; and Nature, as it were, preys upon her-self. In the same manner, the sensible and living Part, *the Soul or Mind*, wanting its proper and natural

* *Supra*, p. 92, 93, &c.

Exercise, is burden'd and diseas'd. Its Part 2.
Thoughts and Passions being unnaturally
with-held from their due Objects, turn
against it-self, and create the highest Im-
patience and Ill-humour.

S. I.
*Ballance of
the Affec-
tions.*

IN * *Brutes*, and other Creatures, who
have not the Use of Reason or Reflection
(at least not after the manner of Man-
kind): 'tis so order'd in Nature, that by
their daily Search after Food, and their
Application either towards the Business of
their Livelihood, or the Affairs of their
Species or Kind, almost their whole time
is taken up, and they fail not to find full
Employment for their Passion, according
to that degree of Agitation to which they
are fitted, and which their Constitution
requires. If any one of these Creatures
be taken out of his natural laborious State,
and plac'd amidst such a Plenty as can pro-
fusely administer to all his Appetites and
Wants; it may be observ'd, that as his Cir-
cumstances grow thus luxuriant, his Tem-
per and Passions have the same growth.
When he comes, at any time, to have the
Accommodations of Life at a cheaper and
easier rate than was at first intended him
by Nature, he is made to pay dear for
'em in another way; by losing his natu-

*Instance in
the animal
Kinds.*

* *Supra*, p. 92, 93. And *Infra*, p. 307, 8, 9, &c. And
VOL. III. p. 216, 217, &c.

Book 2. ral good Disposition, and the Orderliness of
his Kind or Species.

*Balance of
the Affec-
tions.*

*Animal
Kinds.*

THIS needs not to be demonstrated by particular Instances. Whoever has the least knowledge of natural History, or has been an Observer of the several Breeds of Creatures, and their ways of Life, and Propagation, will easily understand this Difference of Orderliness between the *wild* and the *tame* of the same Species. The latter acquire new Habits; and deviate from their original Nature. They lose even the common Instinct and ordinary Ingenuity of their Kind; nor can they ever regain it, whilst they continue in this pamper'd State: but being turn'd to shift abroad, they resume the natural Affection and Sagacity of their Species. They learn to unite in stricter Fellowship; and grow more concern'd for their Offspring. They provide against the Seasons, and make the most of every Advantage given by Nature for the Support and Maintenance of their particular Species, against such as are foreign and hostile. And thus as they grow busy and employ'd, they grow regular and good. Their Petulancy and Vice forsakes them with their Idleness and Ease.

Mankind.

It happens with *Mankind*, that whilst some are by necessity confin'd to Labour, others

others are provided with abundance of all things, by the Pains and Labour of Inferiours. Now, if among the superior and easy sort, there be not something of fit and proper Employment rais'd in the room of what is wanting in common Labour and Toil ; if instead of an Application to any sort of Work, such as has a good and honest End in Society, (as Letters, Sciences, Arts, Husbandry, publick Affairs, OEconomy, or the like) there be a thorow Neglect of all Duty or Employment ; a settled Idleness, Supineness, and Inactivity ; this of necessity must occasion a most relax'd and dissolute State : It must produce a total Disorder of the Passions, and break out in the strangest Irregularitys imaginable.

Part 2.
S. 1.

WE see the enormous Growth of Luxury in capital Citys, such as have been long the Seat of Empire. We see what Improvements are made in Vice of every kind, where numbers of Men are maintain'd in lazy Opulence, and wanton Plenty. 'Tis otherwise with those who are taken up in honest and due Employment, and have been well inur'd to it from their Youth. This we may observe in the hardy remote Provincials, the Inhabitants of smaller Towns, and the industrious sort of common People ; where 'tis rare to meet with any Instances of those Irregularitys, which

Book 2. which are known in Courts and Palaces;
 ~~~~~ and in the rich Foundations of easy and  
*Balance of* pamper'd Priests.  
*the Affec-*  
*tions.*

Now if what we have advanc'd concerning an *inward Constitution* be real and just; if it be true that Nature works by a just Order and Regulation as well in the Passions and Affections; as in the Limbs and Organs which she forms; if it appears withal, that she has so constituted this *inward Part*, that nothing is so essential to it as *Exercise*; and no Exercise so essential as that of *social* or *natural Affection*: it follows, that where this is remov'd or weaken'd, the *inward Part* must necessarily suffer and be impair'd. Let Indolence, Indifference, or Insensibility, be study'd as an Art, or cultivated with the utmost Care; the Passions thus restrain'd will force their Prison, and in one way or another procure their Liberty, and find full Employment. They will be sure to create to themselves *unusual* and *unnatural* Exercise, where they are cut off from such as is *natural* and *good*. And thus in the room of orderly and natural Affection; new and unnatural must be rais'd, and all *inward Order* and *O'Economy* destroy'd.

*O'Economy.*

ONE must have a very imperfect Idea of the Order of Nature in the Formation and Structure of Animals, to imagine that so



so great a *Principle*, so fundamental a Part Part 2:  
 as that of *natural Affection* shou'd possibly  
 be lost or impair'd, without any inward S. 1.  
 Ruin or Subversion of the Temper and  
 Frame of Mind.

WHOEVER is the least vers'd in this moral kind of Architecture, will find the inward *Fabrick* so adjusted, and the whole *Fabrick* so nicely built; that the barely extending of a single Passion a little too far, or the continuance of it too long, is able to bring irrecoverable Ruin and Misery. He will find this experienc'd in the ordinary Case of Phrenzy, and Distraction; when the Mind, dwelling too long upon one Subject (whether prosperous or calamitous) sinks under the weight of it, and proves what the necessity is, of a due *Ballance*, and Counterpoise in the Affections. He will find, that in every different Creature, and distinct Sex, there is a different and distinct *Order*, *Set*, or *Suit* of Passions; proportionable to the different Order of Life, the different Functions and Capacitys assign'd to each. As the Operations and Effects are different, so are the Springs and Causes in each System. The inside Work is fitted to the outward Action and Performance. So that where Habits or Affections are dislodg'd, misplac'd, or chang'd; where those belonging to one Species are intermix'd with those belonging

Book 2.

*Ballance of  
the Affec-  
tions.*

longing to another, there must of necessity be Confusion and Disturbance within.

*Monsters.*

ALL this we may observe easily, by comparing the more perfect with the imperfect Natures, such as are imperfect from their Birth, by having suffer'd Violence *within*, in their earliest *Form*, and inmost *Matrix*. We know how it is with *Monsters*, such as are compounded of different Kinds, or different Sexes. Nor are they less *Monsters*, who are mishapen or distorted in an inward Part. The ordinary Animals appear unnatural and monstrous, when they lose their proper Instincts, forsake their Kind, neglect their Offspring, and pervert those Functions or Capacities bestow'd by Nature. How wretched must it be, therefore, for MAN, of all other Creatures, to lose that *Sense*, and *Feeling*, which is proper to him as a MAN, and suitable to his Character, and Genius? How unfortunate must it be for a Creature, whose dependence on Society is greater than any others, to lose that *natural Affection* by which he is prompted to the Good and Interest of his Species, and Community? Such indeed is Man's natural Share of this *Affection*; that *He*, of all other Creatures, is plainly the least able to bear Solitude. Nor is any thing more apparent, than that there is naturally in every Man  
such


such a degree of social Affection as inclines him to seek the Familiarity and Friendship of his Fellows. 'Tis here that he lets loose a Passion, and gives reins to a Desire which can hardly by any struggle or inward violence be with-held; or if it be, is sure to create a Sadness, Dejection, and Melancholy in the Mind. For whoever is unsociable, and voluntarily shuns Society, or Commerce with the World, must of necessity be morose and ill-natur'd. He, on the other side, who is with-held by force or accident, finds in his Temper the ill Effects of this Restraint. The Inclination, when suppress'd, breeds Discontent; and on the contrary affords a healing and enlivening Joy, when acting at its liberty, and with full scope: as we may see particularly, when after a time of Solitude and long Absence, the Heart is open'd, the Mind disburden'd, and the Secrets of the Breast unfolded to a Bosom-Friend.

THIS we see yet more remarkably instanc'd in Persons of the most elevated Stations; even in Princes, Monarchs, and those who seem by their Condition to be above ordinary human Commerce, and who affect a sort of distant Strangeness from the rest of Mankind. But their Carriage is not the same towards *all* Men. The wiser and better sort, it's true, are

Book 2. often held at a distance; as unfit for their Intimacy, or secret Trust. But to compensate this, there are others substituted in their room, who tho they have the least Merit, and are perhaps the most vile and contemptible of Men, are sufficient, however, to serve the purpose of an imaginary Friendship, and can become *Favourites* in form. These are the Subjects of Humanity in *the Great*. For These we see them often in concern and pain; in These they easily confide: to These they can with pleasure communicate their Power and Greatness, be open, free, generous, confiding, bountiful; as rejoicing in the Action it-self: having no Intention or Aim beyond it; and their Interest, in respect of Policy, often standing a quite contrary way. But where neither the Love of Mankind, nor the Passion for Favourites prevails, the tyrannical Temper fails not to shew it-self in its proper colours, and to the life, with all the Bitterness, Cruelty, and Mistrust, which belong to that solitary and gloomy State of un-communicative and un-friendly Greatness. Nor needs there any particular Proof from History, or present Time, to second this Remark.

*Balance  
of the  
Affections.*

THUS it may appear, how much  
NATURAL AFFECTION is predomi-  
nant;

tant; how it is inwardly join'd to us, Part 2.  
and implanted in our Natures; how interwoven with our other Passions; and  S. 2.  
how essential to that regular Motion and Course of our Affections, on which our Happiness and Self-enjoyment so immediately depend.

AND thus we have demonstrated, That as, *on one side*, TO HAVE THE NATURAL AND GOOD AFFECTIONS, IS TO HAVE THE CHIEF MEANS AND POWER OF SELF-ENJOYMENT: SO, *on the other side*, TO WANT THEM, IS CERTAIN MISERY, AND ILL.

## S E C T. II.

WE are now to prove, That BY HAV- SECOND  
ING THE SELF-PASSIONS TOO Proof;  
INTENSE OR STRONG, A CREATURE from the  
BECOMES MISERABLE. Self-passions.

IN order to this, we must, according to Method, enumerate those Home-affections, which relate to the private Interest or separate OEconomy of the Creature: such as *Love of Life*; — *Resentment of Injury*; — *Pleasure, or Appetite towards Nourishment and the Means of Generation*; — *Interest, or Desire of those Conveniences*, by which we are well *provided for*,

Book 2. and maintain'd;—*Emulation*, or *Love of Praise and Honour*;—*Indolence*, or *Love of Ease and Rest*.—These are the Affections which relate to the private System, and constitute whatever we call *Interestedness* or *Self-love*.

Self-passions.

Now these Affections, if they are moderate, and within certain bounds, are neither injurious to social Life, nor a hindrance to Virtue: but being in an extreme degree, they become *Cowardice*,—*Revengefulness*,—*Luxury*,—*Avarice*,—*Vanity* and *Ambition*,—*Sloth*;—and, as such, are own'd vicious and ill, with respect to human Society. How they are ill also with respect to the private Person, and are to his own disadvantage as well as that of the Publick, we may consider, as we severally examine them.

Love of Life.

IF THERE were any of these Self-passions, which for the Good and Happiness of the Creature might be oppos'd to *Natural Affection*, and allow'd to overballance it; THE DESIRE AND LOVE OF LIFE wou'd have the best Pretence. But it will be found perhaps, that there is no Passion which, by having much allow'd to it, is the occasion of more Disorder and Misery.

THERE

THERE is nothing more certain, or more universally agreed than this; "That *Life* may sometimes be even a Misfortune and Misery." To inforce the continuance of it in Creatures reduc'd to such Extremity, is esteem'd the greatest Cruelty. And tho Religion forbids that any one shou'd be his own Reliever; yet if by some fortunate accident, Death offers of *it-self*, it is embrac'd as highly welcome. And on this account the nearest Friends and Relations often rejoice at the Release of one intirely belov'd; even tho he himself may have been so weak, as earnestly to decline Death, and endeavour the utmost Prolongment of his own un-eligible State.

SINCE *Life*, therefore, may frequently prove a Misfortune and Misery; and since it naturally becomes so, by being only prolong'd to the Infirmitys of old Age; since there is nothing, withal, more common than to see Life over-valu'd, and purchas'd at such a Cost as it can never justly be thought worth: it follows evidently, that the Passion it-self (viz. *the Love of Life*, and *Abhorrence or Dread of Death*) if beyond a certain degree, and over-balancing in the Temper of any Creature, must lead him directly against his own Interest; make him, upon occasion, become the


Book 2. greatest Enemy to himself; and necessitate him to act as such.

*Love of  
Life.*

BUT tho it were allow'd the Interest and Good of a Creature, by all Courses and Means whatsoever, in any circumstances, or at any rate, to preserve *Life*; yet wou'd it be against his Interest still to have this Passion in a high degree. For it wou'd by this means prove ineffectual, and no-way conducing to its End. Various Instances need not be given. For what is there better known, than that at all times an excessive *Fear* betrays to danger, instead of saving from it? 'Tis impossible for any-one to act sensibly, and with Presence of Mind, even in his own Preservation and Defence, when he is strongly press'd by such a Passion. On all extraordinary Emergences, 'tis *Courage* and *Resolution* saves; whilst *Cowardice* robs us of the means of Safety, and not only deprives us of our defensive Facultys, but even runs us to the brink of Ruin, and makes us meet that Evil which of it-self wou'd never have invaded us.

BUT were the *Consequences* of this Passion less injurious than we have represented; it must be allow'd still that *in it-self* it can be no other than miserable; if it be Misery to feel *Cowardice*, and be haunted by those Specters and Horrors which



which are proper to the Character of one Part 2.  
 who has a thorow Dread of Death. For   
 'tis not only when Dangers happen, and §. 2.  
 Hazards are incurr'd, that this sort of  
*Fear* oppresses and distracts. If it in the  
 least prevails, it gives no quarter, so much  
 as at the safest stillest hour of Retreat and  
 Quiet. Every Object suggests Thought  
 enough to employ it. It operates when  
 it is least observ'd by others; and enters  
 at all times into the pleasantest parts of  
 Life; so as to corrupt and poison all En-  
 joyment, and Content. One may safe-  
 ly aver, that by reason of this Passion a-  
 lone, many a Life, if inwardly and close-  
 ly view'd, wou'd be found to be thorow-  
 ly miserable, tho attended with all other  
 Circumstances which in appearance ren-  
 der it happy. But when we add to this,  
 the Meannesses, and base Condescensions,  
 occasion'd by such a passionate Concern  
 for living; when we consider how by  
 means of it we are driven to Actions  
 we can never view without Dislike, and  
 forc'd by degrees from our natural Con-  
 duct, into still greater Crookednesses and  
 Perplexity; there is no-one, surely, so  
 disingenuous as not to allow, that *Life*,  
 in this case, becomes a sorry Purchase,  
 and is pass'd with little Freedom or Sa-  
 tisfaction. For how can this be other-  
 wise, whilst every thing which is generous  
 and worthy, even the chief *Relish, Hap-*


Book 2. *pinefs*, and Good of Life, is for *Life's sake*  
 abandon'd and renounc'd ?

*Love of  
Life.*


AND thus it seems evident, “ That to  
 “ have this Affection of DESIRE and  
 “ LOVE OF LIFE, too intense, or beyond  
 “ a moderate degree, is against the Interest  
 “ of a Creature, and contrary to his *Hap-  
 pinefs* and Good.”

*Resent-  
ment.*

THERE is another Passion very different from that of *Fear*, and which in a certain degree is equally preservative to us; and conducing to our Safety. As *that* is serviceable, in prompting us to shun Danger; so is *this*, in fortifying us against it, and enabling us to repel Injury, and resist Violence when offer'd. 'Tis true, that according to strict Virtue, and a just Regulation of the Affections in a wise and virtuous Man, such Efforts towards Action amount not to what is justly stil'd *Passion* or *Commotion*. A Man of Courage may be cautious without real *Fear*. And a Man of Temper may resist or punish without *Anger*. But in ordinary Characters there must necessarily be some Mixture of the real Passions themselves; which however, in the main, are able to allay and temper one another. And thus ANGER in a manner becomes necessary. 'Tis by this Passion that one Creature offering

offering Violence to another, is deter'd Part 2.  
 from the Execution ; whilst he observes   
 how the Attempt affects his Fellow ; and §. 2.  
 knows by the very Signs which accompa-  
 ny this rising Motion, that if the Injury be  
 carry'd further, it will not pass easily, or  
 with impunity. 'Tis this Passion withal,  
 which after Violence and Hostility execu-  
 ted, rouses a Creature in opposition, and  
 assists him in returning like Hostility and  
 Harm on the Invader. For thus, as *Rage*  
 and *Despair* increase, a Creature grows  
 still more terrible ; and being urg'd to  
 the greatest extremity, finds a degree of  
 Strength and Boldness unexperienc'd till  
 then, and which had never risen except  
 thro the height of Provocation. As to  
 this Affection therefore, notwithstanding  
 its immediate Aim be indeed *the Ill* or Pu-  
 nishment of *another*, yet it is plainly of  
 the sort of those which tend to the Advan-  
 tage and Interest of the Self-system, *the*  
*Animal himself* ; and is withal in other re-  
 spects contributing to the Good and In-  
 terest of the Species. But there is hardly  
 need we should explain how mischievous  
 and self-destructive ANGER is, if it be  
 what we commonly understand by that  
 word : if it be such a Passion as is rash, and  
 violent in the Instant of Provocation ; or  
 such as imprints it-self deeply, and causes a  
 settled *Revenge*, and an eager vindicative  
 Pursuit. No wonder indeed that so much  
 is

Book 2. is done in mere *Revenge*, and under the  
 ~~~~~  
Resent- Weight of a deep *Resentment*, when the
ment. Relief and Satisfaction found in that Indulgence is no other than the assuaging of the most torturous Pain, and the alleviating the most weighty and pressing Sensation of Misery. The Pain of this sort being for a-while remov'd or alleviated by the accomplishment of the Desire, in the Ill of another, leaves indeed behind it the perception of a delicious Ease, and an overflowing of soft and pleasing Sensation. Yet is this, in truth, no better than the *Rack* it-self. For whoever has experienc'd racking Pains, can tell in what manner a sudden Cessation or Respite is us'd to affect him. From hence are those untoward Delights of Perverseness, Frowardness, and an envenom'd malignant Disposition, acting at its liberty. For this is only a *perpetual assuaging of ANGER perpetually renew'd*. In other Characters, the *Passion* arises not so suddenly, or on slight Causes; but being once mov'd, is not so easily quieted. The dormant *Fury*, *REVENGE*, being rais'd once, and wrought up to her highest pitch, rests not till she attains her End; and, that attain'd, is easy, and reposes; making our succeeding Relief and Ease so much the more enjoy'd, as our preceding Anguish and incumbent Pain was of long duration, and bitter sense. Certainly if among *Lovers*, and in the Language of Gallantry,

Gallantry, the Success of ardent Love is Part 2.
call'd the *assuaging of a Pain*; this other 
Success may be far more justly term'd so. §. 2.
However soft or flattering the former Pain
may be esteem'd, this latter surely can be
no pleasing one: Nor can it be possibly
esteem'd other than sound and thorow
Wretchedness, a grating and disgusting Feel-
ing, without the least mixture of any thing
soft, gentle, or agreeable.

'TIS not very necessary to mention the
ill effects of this Passion, in respect of our
Minds, or *Bodys*, our private Condition, or
Circumstances of Life. By these Particu-
lars we may grow too tedious. These are
of the moral sort of Subjects, join'd com-
monly with Religion, and treated so rhetor-
ically, and with such inforc'd repetition in
publick, as to be apt to raise the Satiety of
Mankind. What has been said, may be
enough perhaps to make this evident,
“ That to be subject to such a Passion as
“ we have been mentioning, is, in reality,
“ to be very unhappy.” And, “ That the
“ Habit it-self is a *Disease* of the worst
“ sort; from which *Misery* is inseparable.”

NOW AS to *Luxury*, and what the PLEA-
World calls PLEASURE: Were it true SURE.
(as has been prov'd the contrary) that the *Luxury*.
most considerable Enjoyments were those
merely

Book 2.


P L E A -
S U R E.

Luxury.

merely of *the Sense* ; and were it true, withal, that those Enjoyments of the Sense lay in certain outward things capable of yielding always a due and certain Portion of Pleasure, according to their degree and quality ; it wou'd then follow, that the certain way to obtain Happiness, wou'd be to procure largely of these Subjects, to which Happiness and Pleasure were thus infallibly annex'd. But however fashionably we may apply the Notion of *good Living*, 'twill hardly be found that our inward Facultys are able to keep pace with these outward Supplies of a luxuriant Fortune. And if the natural Disposition and Aptness *from within* be not concurring ; 'twill be in vain that these Subjects are thus multiply'd *from abroad*, and acquir'd with ever so great facility.

It may be observ'd in those who by Excess have gain'd a constant Nauseating and Distaste, that they have nevertheless as constant a Craving or Eagerness of Stomach. But the *Appetite* of this kind is *false* and *unnatural* ; as is that of Thirst arising from a Fever, or contracted by habitual Debauch. Now the Satisfactions of the *natural Appetite*, in a plain way, are infinitely beyond those Indulgences of the most refin'd and elegant *Luxury*. This is often perceiv'd by the Luxurious themselves. It has been experienc'd in People
bred

bred after the sumptuous way, and us'd never to wait, but to prevent Appetite ; that when by any new Turn of Life they came to fall into a more natural Course, or for a while, as on a Journy, or a day of Sport, came accidentally to experience the Sweet of a plain Diet, recommended by due Abstinence and Exercise ; they have with freedom own'd, that it was then they receiv'd the highest Satisfaction and Delight which a *Table* cou'd possibly afford.

Part 2.

S. 2.

ON the other side, it has been as often remark'd in Persons accustom'd to an active Life, and healthful Exercise ; that having once thorowly experienc'd this plainer and more natural Diet, they have upon a following Change of Life regretted their Loss, and undervalu'd the Pleasures receiv'd from all the Delicacys of *Luxury*, in comparison with those remember'd satisfactions of a preceding State. 'Tis plain, that by urging Nature, forcing the Appetite, and inciting Sense, the Keennels of the natural Sensations is lost. And thro' Vice or ill Habit the same Subjects of Appetite may, every day, be sought with greater Ardour ; they are enjoy'd with less Satisfaction. Tho' the Impatience of abstaining be greater ; the Pleasure of Indulgence is really less. The *Palls* or *Nauseatings* which continually intervene, are of the worst and most hateful

Book 2. full kind of Sensation. Hardly is there any thing tasted which is wholly free from this ill relish of a surfeited Sense and ruin'd Appetite. So that instead of a constant and flowing Delight afforded in such a State of Life, the very State it-self is in reality a Sickness and Infirmity, a Corruption of Pleasure, and destructive of every natural and agreeable Sensation. So far is it from being true; "That in this licentious Course we *enjoy* LIFE *best*, or are likely to *make the most* of it."

PLEA-
SURE.
Luxury.

As to the Consequences of such an Indulgence; how fatal to *the Body*, by Diseases of many kinds, and to *the Mind*, by Sottishness and Stupidity; this needs not any explanation.

THE Consequences *as to Interest* are plain enough. Such a State of impotent and unrestrain'd Desire, as it increases our Wants, so it must subject us to a greater Dependence on others. Our private Circumstances, however plentiful or easy they may be, can less easily content us. Ways and Means must be invented to procure what may administer to such an impetuous *Luxury*, as forces us to sacrifice Honour to Fortune, and runs us out into all irregularity and extravagance of Conduct. The Injurys we do our-selves, by Excess and Unbearance, are then surely
apparent,

apparent, when thro an Impotence of this Part 2.
 fort, and an Impossibility of Restraint, we do what we our-selves declare to be de-
 structive to us. But these are Matters ob- S. 2.
 vious of themselves. And from less than PLEA-
 what has been said, 'tis easy to conclude. SURE.
 " That *Luxury*, *Riot*, and *Debauch*, are
 " contrary to real Interest, and to the true
 " Enjoyment of Life."

THERE is another *Luxury* superior Amours.
 to the kind we have been mentioning, and
 which in strictness can scarce be call'd a
Self-passion, since the sole End of it is the
 Advantage and Promotion of the Species.
 But whereas all other social Affections are
 join'd only with a *mental Pleasure*, and
 founded in mere Kindness and Love; this
 has more added to it, and is join'd with
 a *Pleasure of Sense*. Such Concern and
 Care has Nature shewn for the Support
 and Maintenance of the several Species,
 that by a certain *Indigence* and kind of
 Necessity of their Natures, they are made
 to regard the Propagation of their Kind.
 Now whether it be the Interest or Good
 of the Animal to feel this *Indigence* beyond
 a natural and ordinary degree; is what we
 may consider.

HAVING already said so much con-
 cerning *natural* and *unnatural Appetite*,
 there


Book 2.


 PLEA-
SURE.

Amours.

there needs less to be said on this occasion. If it be allow'd, that to all other Pleasures there is a Measure of Appetite belonging, which cannot possibly be exceeded without prejudice to the Creature, even in his very Capacity of enjoying Pleasure ; it will hardly be thought that there is no certain Limit or just Boundary of this other Appetite of *the AMOROUS kind*. There are other sorts of ardent Sensations accidentally experienc'd, which we find pleasant and acceptable whilst they are held within a certain degree ; but which, as they increase, grow oppressive and intolerable. *Laughter* provok'd by Titillation, grows an excessive Pain ; tho it retains still the same Features of Delight and Pleasure. And tho in the case of that particular kind of *Itch* which belongs to a Distemper nam'd from that effect, there are some who, far from disliking the Sensation, find it highly acceptable and delightful ; yet it will hardly be reputed such among the more refin'd sort, even of those who make Pleasure their chief Study, and highest Good.

Now if there be in every Sensation of mere Pleasure, a certain Pitch or Degree of Ardour, which by being further advanc'd, comes the nearer to mere Rage and Fury ; if there be indeed a necessity of stopping *somewhere*, and determining
on

On *some* Boundary for the Passion; where Part 2.
 can we fix our Standard, or how regulate 
 our-selves but *with regard to Nature*, be- S. 2.
 yond which there is no Measure or Rule
 of things? Now *Nature* may be known
 from what we see of the natural State of
 Creatures, and of Man himself, when un-
 prejudic'd by vicious Education.

WHERE happily any-one is bred to a
 natural Life, inur'd to honest Industry
 and Sobriety, and un-accustom'd to any
 thing immoderate or intemperate; he is
 found to have his Appetites and Inclina-
 tions of this sort at command. Nor are
 they on this account less able to afford him
 the Pleasure or Enjoyment of each kind.
 On the contrary; as they are more sound,
 healthy, and un-injur'd by Excess and
 Abuse, they must afford him proportion-
 ate Satisfaction. So that were both these
 Sensations to be experimentally compar'd;
 that of a *virtuous Course* which belong'd
 to one who liv'd a natural and regular
 Life, and that of a *vitious Course* which
 belong'd to one who was relax'd and dis-
 solute; there is no question but Judg-
 ment wou'd be given in favour of the for-
 mer, without regard to Consequences, and
 only with respect to the very Pleasure of
 Sense it-self.

As to the Consequences of this Vice, with respect to the Health and Vigour of *the Body*; there is no need to mention any thing. The Injury it does *the Mind*, tho less notic'd, is yet greater. The Hindrance of all Improvement, the wretched Waste of Time, the Effeminacy, Sloth, Supineness, the Disorder and Looseness of a thousand Passions, thro such a relaxation and enervating of the Mind; are all of them Effects sufficiently apparent; when reflected on.

WHAT the Disadvantages are of this Intemperance, in respect of Interest, Society, and the World; and what the Advantages are of a contrary Sobriety, and Self-command, would be to little purpose to mention. 'Tis well known there can be no Slavery greater than what is consequent to the Dominion and Rule of such a Passion. Of all other, it is the least manageable by Favour or Concession, and assumes the most from Privilege and Indulgence. What it costs us in *the Modesty and Ingenuity* of our Natures, and in the Faith and Honesty of our Characters, is as easily apprehended by any one who will reflect. And it will from hence appear, " That there is no Passion, " which in its Extravagance and Excess " more

“ more necessarily occasions Disorder and Part 2.
“ Unhappiness.”

S. 2.

NOW AS to that Passion which is esteem'd peculiarly *interesting*; as having for its Aim the Possession of Wealth, and what we call a *Settlement* or *Fortune* in the World: If the Regard towards this kind be moderate, and in a reasonable degree; if it occasions no passionate Pursuit, nor raises any ardent Desire or Appetite, there is nothing in this Case which is not compatible with Virtue, and even suitable and beneficial to Society. The publick as well as private System is advanc'd by the Industry, which this Affection excites. But if it grows at length into a real *Passion*; the Injury and Mischief it does the Publick, is not greater than that which it creates to the Person himself. Such a one is in reality a Self-oppressor, and lies heavier on himself than he can ever do on Mankind.

How far a COVETING OR AVARITIOUS TEMPER is miserable, needs not, surely, be explain'd. Who knows not how small a Portion of worldly Matters is sufficient for a Man's single Use and Convenience; and how much his Occasions and Wants might be contracted and reduc'd, if a just Frugality

Book 2. were study'd, and Temperance and a natural Life came once to be pursu'd with half that Application, Industry and Art, which is bestow'd on Sumptuousness and Luxury? Now if Temperance be in reality so advantageous, and the Practice as well as the Consequences of it so pleasing and happy, as has been before express'd; there is little need, on the other side, to mention any thing of the Miserys attending those covetous and eager Desires after things which have no Bounds or Rule; as being out of *Nature*, beyond which there can be no Limits to Desire. For where shall we once stop, when we are beyond this Boundary? How shall we fix or ascertain a thing wholly *unnatural* and *unreasonable*? Or what Method, what Regulation shall we set to mere Imagination, or the Exorbitancy of Fancy, in adding Expence to Expence, or Possession to Possession?

HENCE that known Restlessness of *covetous* and eager Minds, in whatever State or Degree of Fortune they are plac'd; there being no thorow or real Satisfaction, but a kind of Insatiableness belonging to this Condition. For 'tis impossible there shou'd be any *real Enjoyment*, except in consequence of *natural* and *just Appetite*. Nor do we readily call that an *Enjoyment* of Wealth or of Honour, when thro

Cove-

Covetousness or Ambition, the Desire is still forward, and can never rest satisfy'd with its Gains. But against this Vice of COVETOUSNESS, there is enough said continually in the World; and in our common way of speaking, "*A covetous, and a miserable Temper*, has, in reality, one and the same signification."

Part 2.
S. 2.

NOR IS there less said, abroad, as to the Ills of that other aspiring Temper, which exceeds an honest *Emulation*, or *Love of Praise*, and passes the Bounds even of *Vanity* and *Conceit*. Such is that Passion which breaks into an enormous PRIDE and AMBITION. Now if we consider once the Ease, Happiness, and Security which attend a *modest Disposition* and *quiet Mind*, such as is of easy Self-command, fitted to every Station in Society, and able to suite it-self with any reasonable Circumstances whatever; 'twill, on the first view, present us with the most agreeable and winning Character. Nor will it be found necessary after this to call to mind the Excellence and Good of *Moderation*, or the Mischief and Self-injury of immoderate Desires, and conceited fond Imaginations of personal Advantage, in such things as Titles, Honours, Precedencies, Fame, *Glory*, or *vulgar Astonishment*, *Admiration* and *Applause*.

Book 2.

Emulation.

THIS too is obvious, that as the Desires of this kind are rais'd, and become impetuous, and out of our command; so the Aversions and Fears of the contrary part, grow proportionably strong and violent, and the Temper accordingly suspicious, jealous, captious, subject to Apprehensions from all Events, and incapable of bearing the least Repulse or ordinary Disappointment. And hence it may be concluded, "That all Rest and Security
 " *as to what is future*, and all Peace, Contentedness and Ease *as to what is present*,
 " is forfeited by the aspiring Passions of
 " this emulous kind; and by having the
 " Apperites towards *Glory* and *outward*
 " *Appearance* thus transporting and beyond command."

Indolence.

THERE is a certain Temper plac'd often in opposition to those eager and aspiring Aims of which we have been speaking. Not that it really excludes either the Passion of *Covetousness* or *Ambition*; but because it hinders their Effects, and keeps them from breaking into open Action. 'Tis this Passion, which by soothing the Mind, and softning it into an EXCESSIVE LOVE of REST and INDOLENCE, renders high Attempts impracticable, and represents as insuperable the
 Difficulty

Difficultys of a painful and laborious Course towards Wealth and Honours. Now tho an Inclination to Ease, and a Love of moderate Recess and Rest from Action, be as natural and useful to us as the Inclination we have towards Sleep; yet an excessive Love of Rest, and a contracted Aversion to Action and Imployment, must be a Disease in the Mind equal to that of a Lethargy in the Body.

Part 3.

S. 2.

How necessary Action and Exercise are to the Body, may be judg'd by the difference we find between those Constitutions which are accustom'd, and those which are wholly Strangers to it; and by the different Health and Complexion which Labour and due Exercise create, in comparison with that Habit of Body we see consequent to an indulg'd State of Indolence and Rest. Nor is the lazy Habit ruinous to *the Body* only. The languishing Disease corrupts all the Enjoyments of a vigorous and healthy Sense, and carries its Infection into *the Mind*; where it spreads a worse Contagion. For however the Body may for a while hold out, 'tis impossible that the Mind, in which the Distemper is seated, can escape without an immediate Affliction and Disorder. The Habit begets a Tediumness and Anxiety, which influences the whole Temper, and converts the unnatural Rest

Book 2. into an unhappy sort of Activity, ill Humour, and Spleen : of which there has been enough said above, where we consider'd the want of a due *Ballance* in the Affections.

Indolence.

'Tis certain that as in *the Body*, when no Labour or natural Exercise is us'd, the Spirits which want their due Employment, turn against the Constitution, and find work for themselves in a destructive way ; so in a *Soul*, or *Mind*, unexercis'd, and which languishes for want of proper Action and Employment, the Thoughts and Affections being obstructed in their due Course, and depriv'd of their natural Energy, raise Disquiet, and foment a rancorous Eagerness and tormenting Irritation. The Temper from hence becomes more impotent in Passion, more incapable of real Moderation, and, like prepar'd Fuel, readily takes fire by the least Spark.

As to *Interest*, how far it is here concern'd ; how wretched that State is, in which by this Habit a Man is plac'd, towards all the Circumstances and Affairs of Life, when at any time he is call'd to Action ; how subjected he must be to all Inconveniences, wanting to himself, and depriv'd of the Assistance of others ; whilst being unfit for all Offices and Dutys of Society,

Society, he yet of any other Person most needs the help of it, as being least able to assist or support himself; all this is obvious. And thus 'tis evident, "That to have this over-biassing Inclination towards *Rest*, this *slothful*, *soft*, or *effeminate* Temper, averse to Labour and Employment, is to have an unavoidable *Mischief*, and *attendant Plague*."


THUS have we consider'd the *Self-passions*; and what the Consequence is of their rising beyond a moderate degree. These Affections, as self-interesting as they are, can often, we see, become contrary to our real Interest. They betray us into most Misfortunes, and into the greatest of Unhappineffes, that of a profligate and abject Character. As they grow imperious and high, they are the occasion that a Creature in proportion becomes mean and low. They are original to that which we call *Selfishness*, and give rise to that sordid Disposition of which we have already spoken. It appears there can be nothing so miserable in it-self, or so wretched in its Consequence, as to be thus impotent in Temper, thus master'd by Passion, and, by means of it, brought under the most servile Subjection to the World.

Book 2.

Self-passions in general.

'TIS evident withal, that as this *Selfishness* increases in us, so must a certain *Subtlety*, and *feignedness* of Carriage, which naturally accompanys it. And thus the Candour and Ingenuity of our Natures, the Ease and Freedom of our Minds must be forfeited; all *Trust* and *Confidence* in a manner lost; and *Suspensions*, *Jealousys*, and *Envys* multiply'd. A *separate End* and *Interest* must be every day more strongly form'd in us; *generous Views* and *Motives* laid aside: And the more we are thus sensibly disjoin'd every day from Society and our Fellows; the worse Opinion we shall have of those uniting Passions which bind us in strict Alliance and Amity with others. Upon these Terms we must of course endeavour to silence and suppress our natural and good Affections: since they are such as wou'd carry us to the good of Society, against what we fondly conceive to be our private Good and Interest; as has been shewn.

Now if these SELFISH PASSIONS, besides what other Ill they are the occasion of, are withal the certain means of losing us our *natural Affections*; then (by what has been prov'd before) 'tis evident, " That they must be the certain means of " losing us the chief Enjoyment of Life, " and

“ and raising in us those horrid and ~~un-~~ Part 2.
 “ *natural Passions*, and that Savageness of 
 “ Temper, which makes THE GREA- S. 3.
 “ TEST OF MISERYS, and the most
 “ wretched State of Life:” as remains
 for us to explain.

S E C T. III.


THE Passions therefore, which, in the THIRD
 last place, we are to examine, are Proof;
 those which lead neither to a *publick* nor a from the
private Good; and are neither of any ad- unnatural
 vantage to the Species in general, or the Affections.
 Creature in particular. These, in opposi-
 tion to the *social and natural*, we call the
 UNNATURAL AFFECTIONS.

OF this kind is that UNNATURAL Inhuma-
and INHUMAN DELIGHT in *beholding* nity.
Torments, and in viewing Distress, Cala-
 mity, Blood, Massacre and Destruction,
 with a peculiar Joy and Pleasure. This
 has been the reigning Passion of many
 Tyrants, and barbarous Nations; and be-
 longs, in some degree, to such Tempers
 as have thrown off that Courteousness of
 Behaviour which retains in us a just Re-
 verence of Mankind, and prevents the
 Growth of Harshness and Brutality. This
 Passion enters not where Civility or affa-
 ble Manners have the least place. Such is
 the Nature of what we call *good Breeding*,
 that

Book 2. that in the midst of many other Corruptions, it admits not of INHUMANITY, or *savage Pleasure*. To see the Sufferance of an Enemy with cruel Delight, may proceed from the height of Anger, Revenge, Fear, and other extended Self-passions: But to delight in the Torture and Pain of other Creatures indifferently, Natives or Foreigners, of our own or of another Species, Kindred or no Kindred, known or unknown; to feed, as it were, on Death, and be entertain'd with dying Agonys; this has nothing in it accountable in the way of Self-interest or private Good above-mention'd, but is wholly and absolutely unnatural, as it is horrid and miserable.

Petulancy.

THERE is another Affection nearly related to this, which is a *gay and frolicksome Delight* in what is injurious to others; a sort of WANTON MISCHIEVOUSNESS, and Pleasure in what is destructive; a Passion which, instead of being restrain'd, is usually encourag'd in Children: so that 'tis indeed no wonder if the Effects of it are very unfortunately felt in the World. For 'twill be hard, perhaps, for any-one to give a reason why that Temper which was us'd to delight in Disorder and Ravage, when in a Nursery; shou'd not afterwards find delight in other Disturbances, and be the occasion of

of equal Mischief in Familys, amongst Part 2:
Friends, and in the Publick it-self. But 
of this Passion there is not any foundation S. 3.
in Nature ; as has been explain'd.

MALICE, MALIGNITY, or ILL- *Malignity*
WILL, such as is grounded on no Self-
consideration, and where there is no Sub-
ject of Anger or Jealousy, nor any thing
to provoke or cause such a Desire of doing
ill to another ; this also is of that kind of
Passion.

ENVY too, when it is such as arises *Envy*
from the Prosperity or Happiness of ano-
ther Creature no ways interfering with ours,
is of the same kind of Passion.

THERE is also among these, a sort of *Morose-*
HATRED OF MANKIND AND SOCIE- *ness*
TY; a Passion which has been known
perfectly reigning in some Men, and has
had a peculiar Name given to it. A large *MISAN-*
share of this belongs to those who have *THROPY*
long indulg'd themselves in a habitual *Mo-*
roseness, or who by force of ill Nature,
and ill Breeding, have contracted such a
Reverse of Affability, and civil Manners,
that to see or meet a Stranger is offensive.
The very Aspect of Mankind is a distur-
bance to 'em, and they are sure always to
hate at first sight. The Distemper of this
kind is sometimes found to be in a man-
ner

Book 2. *ner National*; but peculiar to the more savage Nations, and a plain *Characteristick* of unciviliz'd Manners, and Barbarity. This is the immediate Opposite to that noble Affection, which, in antient Language, was term'd * *Hospitality*, viz. extensive Love of Mankind, and Relief of Strangers.

Superstition.

WE may add likewise to the number of the *unnatural Passions*, all those which are rais'd from SUPERSTITION (as before-mention'd) and from the *Customs* of barbarous Countrys: All which are too horrid and odious in themselves, to need any proof of their being miserable.

Unnatural Lusts.

THERE might be other Passions nam'd, such as *unnatural Lusts* in foreign Kinds or Species, with other Perversions of the amorous Desire within *our own*. But as to these Depravities of Appetite, we need add nothing here; after what has been already said, on the Subject of the more *natural* Passion,

SUCH as these are the only Affections or Passions we can strictly call *unnatural*, *ill*, and of no tendency so much as to any separate or private Good. Others indeed there are which have this tendency, but are so exorbitant and out of measure, so

* VOL. III. pag. 153, 154. in the Notes.

beyond

beyond the common Bent of any ordinary Part 2.
Self-passion, and so utterly contrary and
 abhorrent to all *social* and *natural Affec-* S. 3.
tion, that they are generally call'd, and may
 be justly esteem'd *unnatural* and *monstrous*.


AMONG these may be reckon'd such *Tyranny*,
 an ENORMOUS PRIDE OF AMBITION,
 such an ARROGANCE and TYRANNY,
 as wou'd willingly leave nothing eminent,
 nothing free, nothing prosperous in the
 World: such an ANGER as wou'd sacri-
 fice every thing to it-self: such a RE-
 VENGE as is never to be extinguish'd;
 nor ever satisfy'd without the greatest
 Crueltys: such an INVETERACY and
 RANCOUR as seeks, as it were, occasion
 to exert it-self; and lays hold of the least
 Subject, so as often to make the weight of
 its Malevolence fall even upon such as are
 mere Objects of Pity and Compassion.

TRACHERY and INGRATITUDE *Treachery,*
 are in strictness mere negative Vices; and, *Ingrati-*
 in themselves, no real Passions; having *tude.*
 neither Aversion or Inclination belonging
 to them; but are deriv'd from the De-
 fect, Unsoundness, or Corruption of the
 Affections in general. But when these
 Vices become remarkable in a Charac-
 ter, and arise in a manner from Inclina-
 tion and Choice; when they are so for-
 ward

Book 2. ward and active, as to appear of their own accord, without any pressing occasion; 'tis apparent they borrow something of the mere *unnatural* Passions, and are deriv'd from *Malice*, *Envy*, and *Inveternity*; as explain'd above.

*Unnatural
Pleasure in
general.*

IT MAY be objected here, that these Passions, *unnatural* as they are, carry still a sort of *Pleasure* with them; and that however barbarous a Pleasure it be, yet still it is a Pleasure and *Satisfaction* which is found in Pride, or Tyranny, Revenge, Malice, or Cruelty exerted. Now if it be possible in Nature, that any-one can feel a barbarous or malicious Joy, otherwise than in consequence of mere Anguish and Torment, then may we perhaps allow this kind of Satisfaction to be call'd *Pleasure* or *Delight*. But the Case is evidently contrary. To love, and to be kind; to have social or natural Affection, Complacency and Good-will, is to feel immediate Satisfaction and genuine Content. 'Tis in it-self *original Joy*, depending on no preceding Pain or Uneasiness; and producing nothing beside Satisfaction merely. On the other side, Animosity, Hatred and Bitterness, is *original Misery* and *Torment*, producing no other Pleasure or Satisfaction, than as the unnatural Desire is for the instant satisfy'd by something

thing which appeases it. How strong so- Part 21
 ever this Pleasure, therefore, may appear ; 
 it only the more implies the Misery of that S. 3.
 State which produces it. For as the cruel-
 lest bodily Pains do by intervals of Assuage-
 ment, produce (as has been shewn) the
 highest bodily Pleasure ; so the fiercest and
 most raging Torments of the Mind, do, by
 certain Moments of Relief, afford the grea-
 test of mental Enjoyments, to those who
 know little of the truer kind.

THE Men of gentlest Dispositions, and *Unnatural*
 best of Tempers, have at some time or *State.*
 other been sufficiently acquainted with
 those Disturbances, which, at ill hours,
 even small occasions are apt to raise. From
 these slender Experiences of Harshness and
 Ill-humour, they fully know and will con-
 fess the ill Moments which are pass'd,
 when the Temper is ever so little gall'd
 or fretted. How must it fare, therefore,
 with those who hardly know any better
 hours in Life ; and who, for the greatest
 part of it, are agitated by a thorow active
 Spleen, a close and settled Malignity, and
 Rancour ? How lively must be the Sense
 of every thwarting and controuling Acci-
 dent ? How great must be the Shocks
 of Disappointment, the Stings of Affront,
 and the Agonys of a working Antipathy,
 against the multiply'd Objects of Offence ?
 Nor can it be wonder'd at, if to Persons

Book 2. thus agitated and oppress'd, it seems a high
 ~~~~~  
 Unnatural State. Delight to appease and allay for the while  
 those furious and rough Motions, by an  
 Indulgence of their Passion in Mischief and  
 Revenge.

Now as to the Consequences of this *unnatural State*, in respect of Interest, and the common Circumstances of Life; upon what Terms a Person who has in this manner lost all which we call *Nature*, can be suppos'd to stand, in respect of the Society of Mankind; how he feels himself in it; what Sense he has of his own Disposition towards others, and of the mutual Disposition of others towards himself: this is easily conceiv'd.

WHAT Injoyment or Rest is there for one who is not conscious of the merited Affection or Love, but, on the contrary, of the Ill-will and Hatred of every human Soul? What ground must this afford for Horror and Delpair? What foundation of Fear, and continual Apprehension from Mankind, and from superior Powers? How thorow and deep must be that *Melancholy*, which being once mov'd, has nothing soft or pleasing from the side of Friendship; to allay or divert it? Wherever such a Creature turns himself; which ever way he casts his Eye; every thing around must appear ghastly and horrid; every

every thing hostile, and, as it were, bent Part 2.  
 against a private and single Being, who is S. 3.  
 thus divided from every thing, and at de-  
 fiance and war with the rest of Nature.

'TIS thus, at last, that A MIND be-  
 comes a *Wilderness*; where all is laid waste,  
 every thing fair and goodly remov'd, and  
 nothing extant beside what is savage and  
 deform'd. Now if Banishment from one's  
 Country, Removal to a foreign Place, or  
 any thing which looks like Solitude or De-  
 sertion, be so heavy to endure; what must  
 it be to feel this *inward Banishment*, this  
 real *Estrangement* from human Commerce;  
 and to be after this manner in a Desert,  
 and in the horridest of Solitudes, even  
 when in the midst of Society? What  
 must it be to live in this *Disagreement* with  
 every thing, this *Irreconcilableness* and *Op-*  
*position* to the Order and Government of  
 the Universe?

HENCE it appears, That the greatest  
 of Miserys accompanys that State which  
 is consequent to the Loss of natural Affec-  
 tion; and That TO HAVE THOSE HOR-  
 RID, MONSTROUS, AND UNNATURAL  
 AFFECTIONS, IS TO BE MISERABLE  
 IN THE HIGHEST DEGREE.

## CONCLUSION.

**T**HUS have we endeavour'd to prove what was propos'd in the beginning. And since in the common and known Sense of *Vice* and *Illness*, no one can be vitious or ill, except either,

1. BY the Deficiency or Weakness of *natural Affections* ;


OR, 2. by the Violence of *the selfish* ;

OR, 3. by such as are plainly *unnatural* :

IT must follow, that if each of these are pernicious and destructive to the Creature, infomuch that his compleatest State of Misery is made from hence ; TO BE WICKED OR VITIOUS, IS TO BE MISERABLE AND UNHAPPY.

AND since every vitious Action must in proportion, more or less, help towards this Mischief, and *Self-ill* ; it must follow THAT EVERY VITIOUS ACTION MUST BE SELF-INJURIOUS AND ILL.

ON the other side ; *the Happiness* and Good of VIRTUE has been prov'd from the contrary Effect of other Affections, such

such as are according to *Nature*, and the *Part 2.*  
OEconomy of the Species or Kind. We   
have cast up all those Particulars, from  
whence (as by way of Addition and Sub-  
traction) the main *Sum* or general Account  
of Happiness, is either augmented or dimi-  
nish'd. And if there be no Article excep-  
tionable in this Scheme of *Moral Arithme-  
tick*; the Subject treated may be said to  
have an evidence as great as that which is  
found in Numbers, or Mathematicks. For  
let us carry *Scepticism* ever so far, let us  
doubt, if we can, of every thing about us;  
we cannot doubt of what passes *within our-  
selves*. Our Passions and Affections are  
known to us. *They* are certain, whatever  
the *Objects* may be, on which they are em-  
ploy'd. Nor is it of any concern to our  
Argument, how these exterior Objects  
stand; whether they are Realitys, or mere  
Illusions; whether we wake or dream. For  
*ill Dreams* will be equally disturbing: And  
a good *Dream* (if Life be nothing else)  
will be easily and happily pass'd. In this  
Dream of Life, therefore, our Demonstra-  
tions have the same force; our *Ballance*  
and *OEconomy* hold good, and our Obliga-  
tion to VIRTUE is in every respect the same.

UPON the whole: There is not, I pre-  
sume, the least degree of Certainty wanting,  
in what has been said concerning the Pre-  
ferableness of the *mental Pleasures* to the

Book 2. *sensual; and even of the sensual, accompa-*  
*ny'd with good Affection, and under a tem-*  
*perate and right use, to those which are no*  
*ways restrain'd, nor supported by any thing*  
*social or affectionate.*

Conclu-  
 sion.

NOR is there less Evidence in what has been said, of *the united Structure and Fa-  
 brick of the Mind*, and of those Passions which constitute *the Temper*, or Soul; and on which its Happiness or Misery so immediately depend. It has been shewn, That in *this Constitution*, the impairing of any one Part must instantly tend to the disorder and ruin of other Parts, and of the Whole it-self; thro the necessary *Connexion* and *Ballance* of the Affections: That those very Passions thro which Men are vitious, are of themselves a Torment and Disease; and that whatsoever is done which is knowingly *ill*, must be of *ill Consciousness*; and in proportion, as the Act is ill, must impair and corrupt social Enjoyment, and destroy both *the Capacity of kind Affection*, and *the Consciousness of meriting any such*. So that neither can we *participate* thus in Joy or Happiness with others, or receive Satisfaction from *the mutual Kindness or imagin'd Love of others*: on which, however, the greatest of all our Pleasures are founded.

IF this be the Case of moral Delinquency; and if the State which is consequent  
 to



to this *Defection* from Nature, be of all Part 2.  
 other the most horrid, oppressive, and mi-  
 ferable; 'twill appear, "*That to yield or*  
 "*consent to any thing ill or immoral, is a*  
 "*Breach of Interest, and leads to the grea-*  
 "*test Ills:*" and, "That, on the other  
 "*side, Every thing which is an Improve-*  
 "*ment of Virtue, or an Establishment of*  
 "*right Affection and Integrity, is an Ad-*  
 "*vancement of Interest, and leads to the*  
 "*greatest and most solid Happiness and*  
 "*Enjoyment.*"

THUS the Wisdom of what rules, and is  
 FIRST and CHIEF in Nature, has made  
 it to be according to the *private Interest*  
 and *Good* of every-one, to work towards the  
*general Good*; which if a Creature ceases to  
 promote, he is actually so far wanting to  
 himself, and ceases to promote his own Hap-  
 piness and Welfare. He is, on this account,  
 directly his own Enemy: Nor can he any  
 otherwise be good or useful to himself, than  
 as he continues good to Society, and to  
 that *Whole* of which he is himself a *Part*.  
 So that VIRTUE, which of all Excellencies  
 and Beautys is the chief, and most amiable;  
*that* which is the Prop and Ornament of  
 human Affairs; which upholds Communi-  
 tys, maintains Union, Friendship, and Cor-  
 respondence amongst Men; *that* by which  
 Countrys, as well as private Familys, flou-  
 rish and are happy; and for want of which,

Book 2. every-thing comely, conspicuous, great and worthy, must perish, and go to ruin; *that*  
*Conclusion.* *single Quality*, thus beneficial to all Society, and to Mankind *in general*, is found equally a Happiness and Good to each Creature *in particular*; and is *that* by which alone Man can be happy, and without which he must be miserable.

AND, thus, VIRTUE is *the Good*, and VICE *the Ill* of every-one.

---

TREATISE

TREATISE V.

VIZ.

THE  
MORALISTS,

A

*Philosophical Rhapsody.*

BEING

A RECITAL of certain  
Conversations on *Natural* and *Moral*  
Subjects.

---

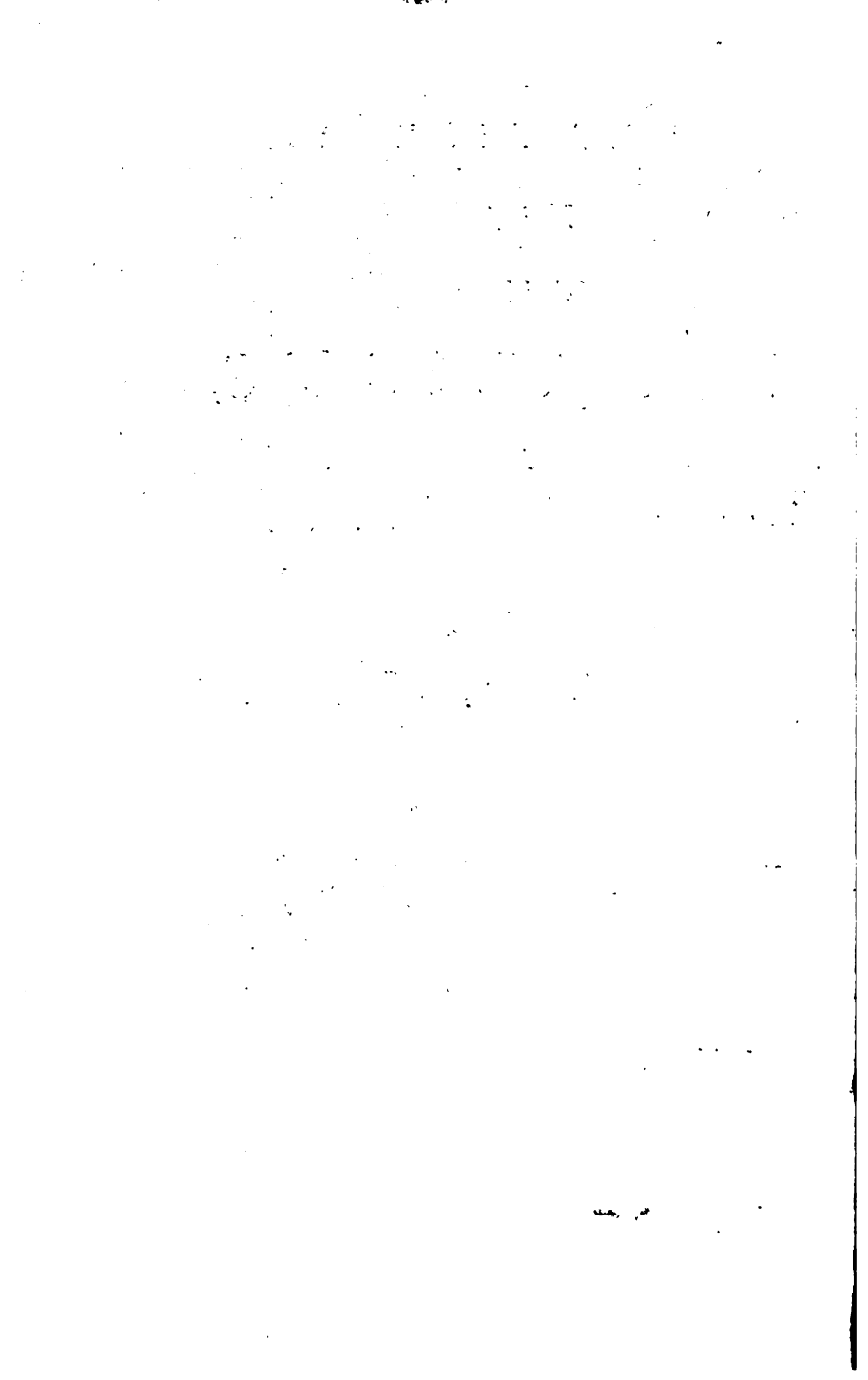
—*Inter Silvas Academi querere Verum.*  
Horat. Ep. 2. Lib. 2.

---

Publiſh'd in the Year M.DCC.IX,

Vol. 2.

[M]





# THE MORALISTS, &c.

## PART I.


### PHILOCLES *to* PALEMON.

**W**HAT Mortal, if he had never chanc'd to hear your Character, PALEMON, cou'd imagine that a Genius fitted for the greatest Affairs, and form'd amidst Courts and Camps, shou'd have so violent a Turn towards Philosophy and

Part I. and the Schools? Who is there cou'd possibly believe that one of your Rank and Credit in the *fashionable* World, shou'd be so thorowly conversant in the *learned* one, and deeply interested in the Affairs of a People so disagreeable to the Generality of Mankind and Humour of the Age?

I BELIEVE truly, You are the only well-bred Man who wou'd have taken the Fancy to talk Philosophy in such a Circle of good Company as we had round us yesterday, when we were in your Coach together, in *the Park*. How you cou'd reconcile the Objects there, to such Subjects as these, was unaccountable. I cou'd only conclude, that either you had an extravagant Passion for Philosophy, to quit so many Charms for it; or that some of those tender Charms had an extravagant Effect, which sent you to Philosophy for Relief.

IN either case I pity'd you; thinking it a milder Fate, to be, as I truly was, for my own part, *a more indifferent Lover*. 'Twas better, I told you, to admire Beauty and Wisdom a little more moderately. 'Twas better, I maintain'd, to ingage so cautiously as to be sure of coming off with a whole Heart, and a Fancy as strong as ever towards all the pretty Entertainments and Diversions of the World. For these, methought,

methought, were things one wou'd not Sect. I.  
willingly part with, for a fine romantick   
Passion of one of those Gentlemen whom  
they call'd *Virtuoso's*.

THE Name I took to belong in common  
to your *Lover* and *Philosopher*. No mat-  
ter what the Object was ; whether Poetry,  
Musick, Philosophy, or *the Fair*. All who  
were enamour'd any-way, were in the same  
Condition. You might perceive it (I told  
you) by their Looks, their Admiration,  
their profound Thoughtfulness, their wa-  
king ever and anon as out of a Dream,  
their talking still of one thing, and scarce  
minding what they said on any other Sub-  
ject.—Sad Indications !

BUT all this Warning serv'd not to de-  
ter you. For you, PALEMON, are one  
of the Adventurous, whom Danger rather  
animates than discourages. And now no-  
thing less will satisfy you than to have our  
Philosophical Adventures recorded. All  
must be laid before you, and sum'd in one  
compleat Account ; to remain, it seems, as  
a Monument of that unseasonable Conver-  
sation, so opposite to the reigning Genius  
of *Gallantry* and *Pleasure*.

I MUST own, indeed, 'tis become  
fashionable in our Nation to talk Politicks  
in

Part I. in every Company, and mix the Discourses of State-affairs with those of Pleasure and Entertainment. However, 'tis certain we approve of no such Freedom in PHILOSOPHY. Nor do we look upon *Politicks* to be of her Province, or in the least related to her. So much have we Moderns degraded her, and stripp'd her of her chief Rights.

YOU must allow me, PALEMEN, thus to bemoan *Philosophy*; since you have forc'd me to ingage with her at a time when her Credit runs so low. She is no longer *active* in the World; nor can hardly, with any advantage, be brought upon the publick Stage. We have immur'd her (poor Lady!) in Colleges and Cells; and have set her servilely to such Works as those in the Mines. Empiricks, and pedantick Sophists are her chief Pupils. The *School-syllogism*, and the *Elixir*, are the choicest of her Products. So far is she from producing Statesmen, as of old, that hardly any Man of Note in the publick cares to own the least Obligation to her. If some few maintain their Acquaintance, and come now and then to her Recesses, 'tis as the Disciple of Quality came to his Lord and Master; "*secretly, and by night.*"

*Morals.*

BUT as low as PHILOSOPHY is reduc'd; if *Morals* be allow'd belonging to her,



her, *Politicks* must undeniably be hers. For to understand the Manners and Constitutions of Men *in common*, 'tis necessary to study MAN *in particular*, and know the Creature, as he is in himself, before we consider him in Company, as he is interested in the State, or join'd to any City or Community. Nothing is more familiar than to reason concerning Man in his *confederate* State and *national* Relation; as he stands engag'd to this or that Society, by Birth or Naturalization: Yet, to consider him as a *Citizen* or *Commoner of the World*, to trace his Pedegree a step higher, and view his End and Constitution in *Nature* it-self, must pass, it seems, for some intricate or over-refin'd Speculation.

It may be properly alledg'd perhaps, as a Reason for this general Shyness in *moral Inquiries*; that the People to whom it has principally belong'd to handle these Subjects, have done it in such a manner as to put the better Sort out of countenance with the Undertaking. The appropriating this Concern to mere *Scholasticks*, has brought their Fashion and Air into the very Subject. There are formal *Set-places*, where, we reckon, there is enough said and taught on the Head of these graver Subjects. We can give no quarter to any thing like it in good Company. The least mention of such matters gives us a disgust,  
and

Part I. and puts us out of humour. If Learning comes a-croſs us, we count it *Pedantry*; if *Language*. Morality, 'tis *Preaching*.

ONE muſt own this, however, as a real Diſadvantage of our modern Converſations; that by ſuch a ſcrupulous Nicety they loſe thoſe maſculine Helps of Learning and ſound Reaſon. Even the *Fair Sex*, in whoſe favour we pretend to make this Condeſcenſion, may with reaſon deſpiſe us for it, and laugh at us for aiming at their peculiar Softneſs. 'Tis no Compliment to them, to affect their Manners, and be *effeminate*. Our Senſe, Language, and Style, as well as our Voice, and Perſon, ſhou'd have ſomething of that Male-Feature, and natural Roughneſs, by which our Sex is diſtinguiſh'd. And whatever *Politeness* we may pretend to, 'tis more a Diſfigurement than any real Refinement of Diſcourſe, to render it thus delicate.

*Style,*

No Work of Wit can be eſteem'd perfect without that Strength and Boldneſs of Hand, which gives it Body and Proportions. A good Piece, the Painters ſay, muſt have good *Muſcling* as well as *Colouring* and *Drapery*. And ſurely no Writing or Diſcourſe, of any great moment, can ſeem other than enervated, when neither ſtrong Reaſon, nor Antiquity, nor the Records of Things, nor the natural Hiſto-  
ry

ry of Man, nor any-thing which can be Sect. 1.  
call'd *Knowledg*, dares accompany it; ex-  
cept perhaps in some ridiculous Habit,  
which may give it an Air of Play and  
Dalliance.

THIS brings to my mind a Reason I  
have often sought for; why we Moderns,  
who abound so much in *Treatises* and *Es-*  
*says*, are so sparing in the way of \* DIA- DIA-  
LOGUE; which heretofore was found the LOGUE.  
politest and best way of managing even the  
graver Subjects. The truth is; 'twou'd be  
an abominable Falshood and belying of the  
Age, to put so much good Sense together  
in any *one* Conversation, as might make it  
hold out steddily, and with plain coherence,  
for an hour's time, till any *one* Subject had  
been rationally examin'd.

To lay Colours, to draw, or describe,  
against the Appearance of Nature and  
Truth, is a Liberty neither permitted the  
Painter nor the Poet. Much less can *the*  
*Philosopher* have such a Privilege; espe-  
cially *in his own Case*. If he represents  
his Philosophy as making any figure in  
Conversation; if he triumphs in the De-  
bate, and gives his own Wisdom the advan-

---

\* VOL. I. pag. 193, 4, 5, 6, 7, &c. VOL. III. pag.  
290, &c.

Part I. tage over the World's; he may be liable  
 ~~~~~ to found Raillery, and possibly be made a  
Fable of.


A Fable, 'TIS said of *the Lion*, that being in civil Conference with *the Man*, he wisely refus'd to yield the Superiority of Strength to him; when, instead of Fact, the Man produc'd only certain Figures and Representations of human Victorys over the Lion-kind. These Master-pieces of Art the Beast discover'd to be wholly of human Forgery: and from these he had good right to appeal. Indeed had he ever in his life been witness to any such Combats as the Man represented to him in the way of Art; possibly the Example might have mov'd him. But old Statues of a HERCULES, a THESEUS, or other Beast-subduers, cou'd have little power over him, whilst he neither saw nor felt any such living Antagonist capable to dispute the Field with him.

WE need not wonder, therefore, that the sort of moral Painting, by way of *Dialogue*, is so much out of fashion; and that we see no more of these philosophical Portraits now-a-days. For where are *the Originals*? Or what tho you (PALEMON) or I, by chance, have lighted on such a one; and pleas'd our-selves with *the Life*? Can you imagine it shou'd make a good *Picture*?

YOU

YOU know too, that in this *Academick* Philosophy I am to present you with, there is a certain way of Questioning and Doubting, which no-way suits the Genius of our Age. Men love to take party instantly. They can't bear being kept in suspense. The Examination torments 'em. They want to be rid of it, upon the easiest terms. 'Tis as if Men fancy'd themselves drowning, whenever they dare trust to the Current of Reason. They seem hurrying away, they know not whither; and are ready to catch at the first Twig. There they chuse afterwards to hang, tho ever so insecurely, rather than trust their Strength to bear 'em above Water. He who has got hold of an *Hypothesis*, how slight soever, is satisfy'd. He can presently answer every Objection, and, with a few Terms of Art, give an account of every thing without trouble.

'Tis no wonder if in this Age the Philosophy of the *Alchymists* prevails so much: since it promises such Wonders, and requires more the Labour of Hands than Brains. We have a strange Fancy to be Creators, a violent Desire at least to know the Knack or Secret by which Nature does all. The rest of our Philosophers only aim at that in Speculation, which our Alchymists aspire

Part I.


to in Practice. For with some of these it has been actually under deliberation how to make *Man*, by other Mediums than Nature has hitherto provided: Every Sect has a *Recipe*. When you know it, you are Master of Nature: you solve all her * *Phænomena*: you see all her Designs, and can account for all her Operations. If need were, you might, perchance too, be of her Laboratory, and work for her. At least one wou'd imagine the Partizans of each modern Sect had this Conceit. They are all ARCHIMEDES'S in their way, and can make a World upon easier terms than he offer'd to move one.

Dogma-
tists.

IN short; there are good Reasons for our being thus superficial, and consequently thus dogmatical in Philosophy. We are too lazy and effeminate, and withal a little too cowardly, to dare *doubt*. The decisive way best becomes our Manners. It sutes as well with our Vices as with our Superstition. Which-ever we are fond of, is secur'd by it. If in favour of Religion we have espous'd an Hypothesis, on which our Faith, we think, depends; we are superstitiously careful not to be loosen'd in it. If, by means of our ill Morals, we are broken with Religion; 'tis the same Case still: We are as much

* See VOL. III. p. 160.

afraid of *Doubting*. We must be sure to Sect. i.
 say, " *It cannot be*;" and " *'Tis Demon-*
strable : For otherwise *Who knows* ?
 " And not to *know*, is to *yield* !"—


THUS we will needs *know* every thing,
 and be at the pains of examining nothing.
 Of all Philosophy, therefore, how abso-
 lutely the most disagreeable must *that* ap-
 pear, which goes upon no establish'd Hypo-
 thesis, nor presents us with any flattering
 Scheme, talks only of Probabilities, Sus-
 pence of Judgment, Inquiry, Search, and
 Caution not to be impos'd on, or deceiv'd ?
 This is that *Academick* Discipline in which
 formerly * the Youth were train'd : when *Antients*
 not only Horsemanship and Military Arts
 had their publick Places of Exercise ; but
 Philosophy too had its Wrestlers in repute.
 Reason and Wit had their *Academy*, and
 underwent this Trial ; not in a formal way,
 apart from the World ; but openly, among
 the better sort, and as an Exercise of the
 genteeler kind. This the greatest Men were
 not ashamed to practise, in the Intervals of
 publick Affairs, in the highest Stations and
 Employments, and at the latest hour of
 their Lives. Hence that way of DIA-
 LOGUE, and Patience of Debate and Rea-
 soning, of which we have scarce a Resem-
 blance left in any of our Conversations, at
 this season of the World.

* VOL. I. 221, 333, &c. and Notes.

CONSIDER then, PALEMON, what *our Picture* is like to prove: and how it will appear; especially in the Light you have unluckily chosen to set it. For who would thus have confronted Philosophy with the Gaiety, Wit, and Humour of the Age?—If this, however, can be for your Credit, I am content. The Project is your own. 'Tis you who have match'd *Philosophy* thus unequally. Therefore leaving you to answer for the Success, I begin this inauspicious Work, which my ill Stars and you have assign'd me; and in which I hardly dare ask Succour of *the Muses*, as poetical as I am oblig'd to throw my self in this Enterprize.

S E C T. II.

“ O WRETCHED State of Man-
 “ kind!—Hapless Nature, thus
 “ to have err'd in thy chief Workman-
 “ ship!—Whence sprang this fatal
 “ Weakness? What Chance or Destiny
 “ shall we accuse? Or shall we mind
 “ the Poets, when they sing thy Tragedy
 “ (PROMETHEUS!) who with thy stolen
 “ celestial Fire, mix'd with vile Clay,
 “ didst mock Heaven's Countenance, and
 “ in abusive Likeness of the Immortals
 “ maddest

"mad'st the compound MAN; that Sect. 1.
 "wretched Mortal, *ill* to himself, and 
 "Cause of *Ill* to all."——

WHAT say you, PALEMON, to this *Rant*, now upon second thoughts? Or have you forgot 'twas just in such a romantick Strain that you broke out against *human Kind*, upon a Day when every thing look'd pleasing, and the *Kind* it-self (I thought) never appear'd fairer, or made a better shew?

BUT 'twas not the whole Creation you thus quarrel'd with: Nor were you so out of conceit with *all* Beauty. The Verdure of the Field, the distant Prospects, the gilded Horizon, and purple Sky, form'd by a setting Sun, had Charms in abundance, and were able to make impression on you. Here, PALEMON, you allow'd me to admire as much as I pleas'd; when, at the same instant, you wou'd not bear my talking to you of those nearer Beautys of our own Kind, which I thought more natural for Men at our Age to admire. Your Severity however cou'd not silence me upon this Subject. I continu'd to plead the Cause of *the Fair*, and advance their Charms above all those other Beautys of Nature. And when you took advantage from this Opposition, to shew how little there was of *Nature*, and how much

Part I. of *Art* in what I admir'd, I made the best
 ~~~~~ Apology I cou'd ; and fighting for *Béauty*,  
 kept the Field as long as there was one  
*Fair-one* present.

*Gallantry.* CONSIDERING how your Génius stood  
 inclin'd to Poetry, I wonder'd most to find  
 you on a sudden grown so out of conceit  
 with our modern Poets, and *Galante* Wri-  
 ters ; whom I quoted to you, as better Au-  
 thoritys than any Antient in behalf of the  
 Fair Sex, and their Prerogative. But this  
 you treated slightly. You acknowledg'd it  
 to be true indeed, what had been observ'd  
 by some late Wits, " That GALLANTRY  
 " *was of a modern Growth.*" And well  
 it might be so, you thought, without dis-  
 honour to the Antients ; who understood  
*Truth* and *Nature* too well, to admit so ri-  
 diculous an Invention.


'Twas in vain, therefore, that I held  
 up this Shield in my defence. I did my  
 Cause no service, when in behalf of *the*  
*Fair* I pleaded all the fine things which are  
 usually said, in this romantick way, to their  
 advantage. You attack'd the very Fortress  
 of *Gallantry*, ridicul'd *the Point of Ho-*  
*nour*, with all those nice Sentiments and  
 Ceremonials belonging to it. You damn'd  
 even our Favourite *Novels* ; those dear  
 sweet natural Pieces, writ most of 'em by  
 the Fair Sex themselves. In short, this  
 whole

whole Order and Scheme of Wit you condemn'd absolutely, as *false, monstrous*, and GOTHICK ; quite out of the way of Nature, and sprung from the mere Dregs of *Chivalry* or *Knight-Errantry* ; a thing which in it-self you prefer'd, as of a better Taste than that which reigns at present in its stead. For at a time when this Mystery of *Gallantry* carry'd along with it the Notion of doughty Knighthood ; when *the Fair* were made Witnesses, and, in a manner, Partys to Feats of Arms, enter'd into all the Points of War and Combat, and were won by dint of Launce and manly Prowess ; 'twas not altogether absurd (you thought) on such a foundation as this, to pay 'em Homage and Adoration, make 'em the Standard of Wit and Manners, and bring Mankind under their Laws. But in a Country where no *She-Saints* were worship'd by any Authority from Religion, 'twas as impertinent and senseless, as it was profane, to deify the Sex, raise 'em to a Capacity above what Nature had allow'd, and treat 'em with a *Respect* which in the natural way of Love they themselves were the aptest to complain of.

INDEED as for the *Moral* Part, 'twas wonderful (you said) to observe the Licentiousness which this foppish courtly Humour had establish'd in the World. What such a flattering way of Address to all the

Part 1. Sex in common cou'd mean, you knew  
 not; unless it were to render 'em wholly  
*Gallantry.* *common* indeed, and make each Fair-one  
 apprehend that the Publick had a right to  
 her; and that Beauty was too communica-  
 tive and divine a Thing, to be made a Pro-  
 perty, and confin'd to *One* at once.

MEAN while our Company began to  
 leave us. The *Beau-monde*, whom you  
 had been thus severely censuring, drew off  
 apace: for it grew late. I took notice  
 that the approaching Objects of the Night  
 were the more agreeable to you, for the  
 Solitude they introduc'd; and that the  
 Moon and Planets which began now to  
 appear, were in reality the only proper  
 Company for a Man in your Humour.  
 For now you began to talk with much Sa-  
 tisfaction of natural Things, and of all Or-  
 ders of Beautys, MAN only excepted.  
 Never did I hear a finer Description than  
 you made of the Order of the heavenly  
 Luminarys, the Circles of the Planets, and  
 their attendant *Satellites*. And you who  
 wou'd allow nothing to those fair earthly  
 Luminarys in the Circles which just now  
 we mov'd in; you, PALEMON, who  
 seem'd to overlook the Pride of that Thea-  
 tre, began now to look out with Ravish-  
 ment on this other, and triumph in the  
 new philosophical Scene of Worlds un-  
 known.

known. Here, when you had pretty well Sect. 2.  
 spent the first Fire of your Imagination, I   
 would have got you to reason more calmly  
 with me upon that other Part of the Crea-  
 tion, your own Kind; to which (I told  
 you) you discover'd so much Aversion, as *Mis-an-*  
*throp*  
 would make one believe you a compleat  
 TIMON, or *Man-hater*.

“ CAN you then, O PHILOCLES,  
 (said you in a high strain, and with a mov-  
 ing air of Passion) “ Can you believe me  
 “ of that Character? Or can you think it  
 “ of me in earnest, that being MAN, and  
 “ conscious of my Nature, I shou'd have  
 “ yet so little of Humanity, as not to feel  
 “ the Affections of a *Man*? Or feeling  
 “ what is natural towards my Kind, that I  
 “ shou'd hold their Interest light, and be  
 “ indifferently affected with what affects  
 “ or seriously concerns them? Am I so ill  
 “ a Lover of *my Country*? Or is it that  
 “ you find me indeed so ill a *Friend*? For  
 “ what are all Relations else? What are  
 “ the Ties of private Friendship, if that  
 “ to *Mankind* be not obliging? Can there  
 “ be yet a Bond in Nature, if *That* be  
 “ none? O PHILOCLES! Believe me  
 “ when I say I feel it one, and fully prove  
 “ its Power within me. Think not that  
 “ I wou'd willingly break my Chain:  
 “ Nor count me so degenerate or unna-  
 “ tural, as whilst I hold this Form, and  
 N 4 “ wear

Part 1.

“ wear a human Heart, I shou’d throw  
 “ off Love, Compassion, Kindness, and  
 “ not befriend *Mankind*.——But O what  
 “ Treacherys! what Disorders! And how  
 “ corrupt is all!——Did you not observe  
 “ e’en now, when all this Space was  
 “ fill’d with goodly Rows of Company,  
 “ how peaceful all appear’d.——What  
 “ Charms there are in publick Companys!  
 “ What Harmony in Courts and Courtly  
 “ Places! How pleas’d is every Face!  
 “ How courteous and humane the gene-  
 “ ral Carriage and Behaviour!——What  
 “ Creature capable of Reflection, if he  
 “ thus saw us Mankind, and saw no more,  
 “ wou’d not believe our Earth *a very*  
 “ *Heaven*? What Foreigner (the Inha-  
 “ bitant, suppose, of some near Planet)  
 “ when he had travel’d hither, and sur-  
 “ vey’d this outward Face of things, wou’d  
 “ think of what lay hid beneath the  
 “ Mask?——But let him stay a-while,  
 “ Allow him leisure; till he has gain’d a  
 “ nearer View, and following our dis-  
 “ solv’d Assemblies to their particular *Re-*  
 “ *cesses*, he has the power of seeing ’em  
 “ in this new Aspect.——Here he may be-  
 “ hold those great Men of the Ministry,  
 “ who not an hour ago in publick appear’d  
 “ such Friends, now plotting craftily each  
 “ other’s Ruin, with the Ruin of the State  
 “ it-self, a Sacrifice to their Ambition.  
 “ Here he may see too those of a softer  
 “ kind,

" kind, who knowing not Ambition, fol- Sect. 2.  
 " low only *Love*. Yet (PHILOCLEES) ~~~~~  
 " who wou'd think it ?" —

AT these words, you may remember, I discover'd the Lightness of my Temper, and laugh'd aloud ; which I cou'd hardly hope you wou'd have pardon'd, had I not freely told you the true reason. 'Twas not for want of being affected with what you spoke. I only imagin'd a more particular Cause had provok'd you, when having pass'd over the Ambitious, you were coming full-charg'd against the People of a softer Passion. At first, I look'd on you as deeply *in the Spleen* : But now I concluded you *in love*, and so unhappily engag'd as to have reason to complain of Infidelity. " This, thought I, has mov'd PALEMÓN thus. Hence the *sad World* ! Here was " that *Corruption*, and those *Disorders* he " lamented !"

AFTER I had begg'd pardon for my *Cause of*  
 rude Mirth, which had the good fortune <sup>III.</sup>  
 however to make some change in your  
 Humour ; we fell naturally into cool Reasoning about the Nature and Cause of  
 ILL in general : " Thro what *Contin-*  
 " *gency*, what *Chance* ; by what fatal *Ne-*  
 " *cessity*, what *Will*, or what *Permission*  
 " it came upon the World ; or being come  
 " once,

Part I. "once, shou'd still subsist." This \* *In-*  
*quiry*, which with slight Reasoners is easily  
 got over, stuck hard, I found, with one  
 of your close Judgment and Penetration.  
 And this insensibly led us into a nice Criti-  
 cism of NATURE; whom you sharply ar-  
 raign'd for many Absurditys you thought  
 her guilty of, in relation to *Mankind*, and  
 his peculiar State.

*W*  
*Cause of*  
*ill.*

FAIN wou'd I have perswaded you to  
 think with more Equality of NATURE,  
 and to proportion her Defects a little bet-  
 ter. My Notion was, that the Grievance  
 lay not altogether in *one* part, as you  
 plac'd it; but that *every thing* had its  
 share of Inconvenience. Pleasure and Pain,  
 Beauty and Deformity, Good and Ill,  
 seem'd to me every-where interwoven;  
 and one with another made, I thought, a  
 pretty Mixture, agreeable enough, in the  
 main. 'Twas the same, I fancy'd, as in  
 some of those rich Stuffs, where the  
 Flowers and Ground were oddly put to-  
 gether, with such irregular Work, and  
 contrary Colours, as look'd ill *in the*  
*Pattern*, but mighty natural and well *in*  
*the Piece*.

BUT you were still upon Extremes.  
 Nothing wou'd serve to excuse the Faults

---

\* Treatise IV, See the Beginning.



or Blemishes of this Part of the Creation, Sect. 2.  
 MANKIND; even tho all besides were fair, without a Blemish. The very Storms and Tempests had their Beauty in your account, those alone excepted which arose in human Breasts. 'Twas only for this turbulent Race of Mortals you offer'd to accuse Nature. And I now found why you had been so transported with the Story of PROMETHEUS. You wanted such an Operator as this for Mankind: And you were tempted to wish the Story cou'd have been confirm'd in modern Divinity; that clearing the supreme Powers of any Concern or Hand in the ill Workmanship, you might have the liberty of inveighing against it, without Profaneness.

THIS however, I told you, was but a slight Evasion of the religious Poets among the Antients. 'Twas easy to answer every Objection by a PROMETHEUS: as, "Why had Mankind *originally* so much Folly and Perverseness? "Why so much Pride, such Ambition, "and strange Appetites? Why so many "Plagues, and Curses, entail'd on him "and his Posterity?" — PROMETHEUS was the Cause. The plastick Artist, with his unlucky Hand, solv'd all. " 'Twas "*His* Contrivance (they said) and *He* "was to answer for it." They reckon'd it a fair Game, if they cou'd gain *a single Remove,*

Part I. *Remove*, and put the *evil Cause* farther off. If the People ask'd a Question, they told 'em *a Tale*, and sent 'em away satisfy'd. None besides a few Philosophers wou'd be such Busy-body's (they thought) as to look beyond, or ask a second Question.

*Cause of*  
III.

AND in reality, continu'd I, 'tis not to be imagin'd how serviceable *a Tale* is, to amuse others besides mere Children; and how much easier the Generality of Men are paid in this Paper-coin, than in Sterling Reason. We ought not to laugh so readily at the *Indian* Philosophers, who to satisfy their People how this huge Frame of the World is supported, tell 'em 'tis by an Elephant.—And the Elephant how?—A shroud Question! but which by no means shou'd be answer'd. 'Tis here only that our *Indian* Philosophers are to blame. They shou'd be contented with *the Elephant*, and go no further. But they have *a Tortoise* in reserve; whose Back, they think, is broad enough. So the Tortoise must bear the new Load: And thus the matter stands worse than before.


THE Heathen Story of PROMETHEUS was, I told you, much the same with this *Indian* one: only the Heathen Mythologists were so wise as not to go beyond *the first Remove*. A single PROMETHEUS

PROMETHEUS was enough to take the Weight Sect. 2.  
 from JOVE. They fairly made JOVE a  
 Stander-by. He resolv'd, it seems, to be  
 Neuter; and see what wou'd come of  
 this notable Experiment; how the dan-  
 gerous Man-moulder wou'd proceed; and  
 what wou'd be the Event of his Tamper-  
 ing.—Excellent Account, to satisfy the  
 Heathen *Vulgar*! But how, think you,  
 wou'd a *Philosopher* digest this? “For  
 “the Gods (he wou'd say presently)  
 “either cou'd have hinder'd PROME-  
 “THEUS's Creation, or they cou'd not.  
 “If they cou'd, they were answerable  
 “for the Consequences; if they cou'd  
 “not, they were no longer Gods, being  
 “thus limited and controul'd. And whe-  
 “ther PROMETHEUS were a Name for  
 “Chance, *Destiny*, a *plastick Nature*, or  
 “an *evil Demon*; whatever was design'd  
 “by it; 'twas still the same Breach of  
 “OMNIPOTENCE.”

THAT such a hazardous Affair as this  
 of *Creation* shou'd have been undertaken  
 by those who had not perfect Foresight as  
 well as Command, you own'd was neither  
 wise nor just. But you stood to Foresight.  
 You allow'd the *Consequences* to have been  
 understood by the creating Powers, when  
 they undertook their Work: and you de-  
 ny'd that it wou'd have been better for  
 them to have omitted it; tho they knew  
 what


Part I. what wou'd be the Event. " 'Twas bet-  
 ~~~~~ " ter still that the Project shou'd be exe-  
 Cause of " cuted, whatever might become of Man-
 Ill. " kind, or how hard soever such a Cre-
 " ation was like to fall on the generality
 " of this miserable Race. For 'twas im-
 " possible, you thought, that Heaven
 " shou'd have acted otherwise than *for*
 " *the best*. So that even from this Mi-
 " sery and ILL of *Man*, there was un-
 " doubtedly some GOOD arising; some-
 " thing which over-ballanc'd all, and made
 " full amends."

THIS was a Confession I wonder'd indeed how I came to draw from you: And soon afterwards I found you somewhat uneasy under it. For here I took up your own part against you; and setting all those Villanys and Corruptions of human Kind in the same light you had done just before, I put it upon you to tell, where possibly cou'd be the Advantage or Good arising hence; or what Excellence or Beauty cou'd redound from those tragical Pictures you your-self had drawn so well after the Life. Whether it must not be a very strong philosophical Faith, which shou'd persuade one that those dismal Parts you set to view were only the necessary Shades of a fine Piece, to be reckon'd among the Beautys of the Creation;

tion: Or whether possibly you might look Sect. 1.
 upon that Maxim as very fit for Heaven, 
 which I was sure you did not approve at
 all in Mankind; "*To do ILL, that Good*
" might follow."

THIS, I said, made me think of the
 manner of our modern PROMETHEUS's,
the Mountebanks, who perform'd such Won-
 ders of many kinds, here on our earthly
 Stages. They could create Diseases, and
 make Mischief, in order *to heal*; and *to re-*
store. But shou'd we assign such a Practice
 as this to Heaven? Shou'd we dare to
 make such *Empiricks* of the Gods, and
 such a *Patient* of poor Nature? "Was
 " this a reason for Nature's Sickliness?
 " Or how else came she (poor Innocent!)
 " to fall sick, or run astray? Had she been
 " *originally* healthy, or created sound *at*
 " *first*; she had *still* continu'd so. 'Twas
 " no Credit to the Gods to leave her desti-
 " tute, or with a Flaw which wou'd cost
 " dear the mending, and make them Suf-
 " ferers for their own Work." —

I WAS going to bring HOMER to
 witness for the many Troubles of JOVE,
 the Death of SARPEDON, and the fre-
 quent Crosses Heaven met with, from the
 fatal Sisters. But this Discourse, I saw,
 displeas'd you. I had by this time plain-
 ly discover'd my Inclination to SCER-
 TICISM.



Part I. TICISM. And here not only *Religion* was objected to me, but I was reproach'd too on the account of that *Gallantry* which I had some time before defended. Both were join'd together in the Charge you made against me, when you saw I adher'd to nothing : but was now as ready to declaim against *the Fair*, as I had been before to plead their Cause, and defend the Moral of Lovers. This, you said, was my constant way in all Debates : I was as well pleas'd with the Reason on one side, as on the other : I never troubled my-self about the Success of the Argument, but laugh'd still, whatever way it went ; and even when I convinc'd others, never seem'd as if I was convinc'd my-self.

I OWN'D to you, PALEMON, there was Truth enough in your Charge. For above all things I lov'd Ease ; and of all Philosophers those who reason'd most at their ease, and were never angry or disturb'd ; as those call'd SCEPTICKS, you own'd, never were. I look'd upon this kind of *Philosophy* as the prettiest, agreeablest, roving Exercise of the Mind, possible to be imagin'd. The other kind, I thought, was painful and laborious ; “ keep always in the Limits of *one Path* ; “ to drive always *at a Point* ; and hold “ precisely to what Men, at a venture, call'd

“ THE

“ THE TRUTH: A *Point*, in all appea- Sect. 1.
 “ rance, very unfix’d, and hard to alcer-
 “ rain.” Besides, my way hurt no body.
 I was always the first to comply on any
 occasion ; and for Matters of Religion,
 was further from Profaneness and erro-
 neous Doctrine than any-one. I cou’d
 never have the Sufficiency to shock my
 spiritual and learned Superiors. I was the
 furthest from leaning to my own Under-
 standing : nor was I one who exalted *Rea-*
son above *Faith*, or insisted much upon
 what the dogmatical Men call *Demonstra-*
tion, and dare oppose to the sacred Myste-
 rys of Religion. And to shew you (con-
 tinu’d I) how impossible it is for the Men
 of our sort ever to err from the Catho-
 lick and Establish’d Faith, pray consider ;
 That whereas *Others* pretend to see with
 their own Eyes, what is properest and best
 for ’em in Religion ; *We*, for our parts,
 pretend not to see with any other than
 those of our spiritual Guides. Neither do
 we presume to judg those Guides our-selves ;
 but submit to them, as they are appointed
 us by our just Superiors. In short, you
 who are *Rationalists*, and walk by *Rea-*
son in every thing, pretend to know all
 things, whilst you believe little or no-
 thing : We for our parts *know* nothing, and
believe all.

Part I.

Scepticism.

HERE I ended; and, in return, you only ask'd me coldly, "Whether with that fine SCEPTICISM of mine, I made no more distinction between Sincerity and Insincerity in *Actions*, than I did between Truth and Falshood, Right and Wrong, in *Arguments*?"

I DURST not ask what your Question drove at. I was afraid I saw it too plainly; and that by this loose way of talking, which I had learnt in some fashionable Conversations of the World, I had given you occasion to suspect me of the worst sort of *Scepticism*, such as spar'd nothing; but overthrew all Principles, *Moral* and *Divine*.

FORGIVE me (said I) good PALEMON: you are offended, I see, and not without cause. But what if I shou'd endeavour to compensate my *Sceptical* Misbehaviour, by using a known *Sceptick Privilege*, and asserting strenuously the Cause I have hitherto oppos'd? Do not imagine that I dare aspire so high as to defend reveal'd Religion, or the holy Mysterys of the Christian Faith. I am unworthy of such a Task, and shou'd profane the Subject. 'Tis of mere *Philosophy* I speak: And my Fancy is only to try what I can muster

muster up thence, to make head against Sect. 2.
the chief Arguments of *Atheism*, and re-
establiſh what I have offer'd to looſen in
the System of *Theiſm*.

YOUR Project, ſaid you, bids fair to *Deiſm*,
reconcile me to your Character, which I
was beginning to miſtruſt. For as averſe
as I am to the Cauſe of *Theiſm*, or Name of
DEIST, when taken in a ſenſe excluſive of
Revelation; I conſider ſtill that, in ſtrict-
neſs; the Root of all is THEISM; and that
to be a ſettled Chriſtian, it is neceſſary to
be firſt of all a good THEIST. For *Theiſm*
can only be oppos'd to * *Polytheiſm*, or *A-
theiſm*. Nor have I patience to hear the
Name of DEIST (the higheſt of all Names)
decry'd, and ſet in oppoſition to *Chriſtiani-
ty*. " As if our Religion was a kind of
" *Magick*, which depended not on the Be-
" lief of a ſingle ſupreme Being. Or as if
" the firm and rational Belief of ſuch a Be-
" ing, on philoſophical Grounds, was an
" improper Qualification for believing any
" thing further." Excellent Preſumption,
for thoſe who naturally incline to the Diſ-
belief of Revelation, or who thro Vanity
affect a Freedom of this kind! —

BUT let me hear (continu'd you) whe-
ther in good Earneſt, and thorow Sinceri-

* " To *Polytheiſm* (*Demoniſm*) or *Atheiſm*:" as above,
p. 13.

Part I. ty, you intend to advance any thing in fa-
Deism. vour of that Opinion which is fundamental
 to all Religion ; or whether you design
 only to divert your-self with the Subject,
 as you have done hitherto ? “ Whatever
 “ your Thoughts are, PHILOCLES, I am
 “ resolv’d to force ’em from you. You can
 “ no longer plead the Unfutableness of the
 “ Time or Place to such grave Subjects.
 “ The gaudy Scene is over with the Day.
 “ Our Company have long since quitted
 “ the Field. And the solemn Majesty of
 “ such a Night as this, may justly sute
 “ with the profoundest Meditation, or most
 “ serious Discourse.”

THUS, PALEMON, you continu’d to
 urge me ; till by necessity I was drawn
 into the following Vein of *Philosophical*
Enthusiasm.

S E C T. III.

YOU shall find then, said I (taking a
 grave Air) that it is possible for me
 to be serious ; and that ’tis probable I am
 growing so, for good and all. Your Over-
 seriousness a-while since, at such an un-
 seasonable time, may have driven me per-
 haps into a contrary Extreme, by oppo-
 sition to your melancholy Humour. But
 I have now a better Idea of that *Melan-*
choly

choly you discover'd ; and notwithstanding Sect. 3.
 the humorous Turn you were pleas'd to
 give it, I am perswaded it has a different
 Foundation from any of those fantastical
 Causes I then assign'd to it. " LOVE, LOVE,
 " doubtless, is at the bottom : but a no-
 " bler Love than such as common Beautys
 " inspire." —

HERE, in my turn, I began to raise my
 Voice, and imitate the solemn way you
 had been teaching me. " *Knowing* as
 " you are, continu'd I, *well-knowing* and
 " experienc'd in all the Degrees and Or-
 " ders of Beauty, in all the mysterious Beauty,
 " Charms of the particular Forms ; you
 " rise to what is more general ; and with
 " a larger Heart, and Mind more com-
 " prehensive, you generously seek that
 " which is highest in the kind. Not cap-
 " tivated by the Lineaments of a fair
 " Face, or the well-drawn Proportions of
 " a human Body, you view *the Life* it-
 " self, and embrace rather *the Mind* which
 " adds the Lustre, and renders chiefly
 " amiable.

" NOR is the Enjoyment of such a fin- Society,
 " gle Beauty sufficient to satisfy such an
 " aspiring Soul. It seeks how to combine
 " more Beautys, and by what Coalition
 " of these, to form a beautiful Society,
 " It views Communitys, Friendships, Re-
 " lations,

Part I. "lations, Dutys; and considers by what
 " Harmony of particular Minds the general
 " Harmony is compos'd, and *Common-*
 " *weal* establish'd.

Virtue.

" Nor satisfy'd even with publick Good
 " in *one* Community of Men, it frames
 " it-self a nobler Object, and with en-
 " larg'd Affection seeks *the Good of Man-*
 " *kind*. It dwells with Pleasure amidst
 " that Reason, and those Orders on which
 " this fair Correspondence and goodly In-
 " terest is establish'd. Laws, Constitu-
 " tions, civil and religious Rites; what-
 " ever civilizes or polishes rude Mankind;
 " the Sciences and Arts, Philosophy, Mo-
 " rals, Virtue; the flourishing State of
 " human Affairs, and the Perfection of
 " human Nature; these are its delightful
 " Prospects, and this the Charm of Beauty
 " which attracts it.

Universe,

" STILL ardent in this Pursuit (such
 " is its Love of Order and Perfection) it
 " rests not here; nor satisfys it-self with
 " the Beauty of a Part; but extending
 " further its communicative Bounty, seeks
 " the Good of All, and affects the Interest
 " and Prosperity of *the Whole*. True to
 " its native World and higher Country,
 " 'tis here it seeks Order and Perfection;
 " wishing the best, and hoping still to find
 " a just and wise Administration.

" AND

“ AND since all Hope of this were vain
 “ and idle, if no *universal Mind* presided;
 “ since without such a supreme Intelli-
 “ gence and providential Care, the dis-
 “ tracted Universe must be condemn’d to
 “ suffer infinite Calamitys; ’tis here the
 “ generous Mind labours to discover that
 “ *healing Cause* by which the Interest of
 “ *the Whole* is securely establish’d, the
 “ Beauty of Things, and the universal Or-
 “ der happily sustain’d.

“ THIS, PALEMON, is the Labour Ill natural
 “ of your Soul: and This its *Melancho-* and moral.
 “ *ly*; when unsuccessfully pursuing the
 “ supreme Beauty, it meets with dark-
 “ ning Clouds which intercept its Sight.
 “ Monsters arise, not those from *Lybian*
 “ Desarts, but from the Heart of Man
 “ more fertile; and with their horrid
 “ Aspect cast an unseemly Reflection up-
 “ on NATURE. She, helpless (as she is
 “ thought) and working thus absurdly, is
 “ condemn’d, the Government of the
 “ World arraign’d, and DEITY made
 “ void.

“ MUCH is alledg’d in answer, to
 “ shew why *Nature* errs, and how she
 “ came thus impotent and erring from an
 “ unerring Hand. But I deny she errs;
 “ and when she seems most ignorant or
 “ perverse

Part I. “ perverse in her Productions, I assert her
 “ even then as wise and provident, as in
 ill natural “ her goodliest Works. For ’tis not then
 and moral. “ that Men complain of the World’s Or-
 “ der, or abhor the Face of things, when
 “ they see various Interests mix’d and inter-
 “ fering ; Natures subordinate, of different
 “ kinds, oppos’d one to another, and in
 “ their different Operations submitted, the
 “ higher to the lower. ’Tis on the con-
 “ trary, from this Order of inferior and
 “ superior Things, that we admire the
 “ * World’s Beauty, founded thus on *Con-*
 “ *trarietys* : whilst from such various and
 “ disagreeing Principles, *a universal Con-*
 “ *cord* is establish’d.

“ THUS in the several Orders of ter-
 “ restrial Forms, *a Resignation* is requir’d,
 “ a Sacrifice and mutual yielding of Na-
 “ tures one to another. The Vegetables
 “ by their Death sustain the Animals :
 “ and Animal Bodys dissolv’d, enrich the
 “ Earth, and raise again the vegetable
 “ World. The numerous Insects are re-
 “ duc’d by the superior Kinds of Birds
 “ and Beasts : and these again are check’d
 “ by Man ; who in his turn submits to o-
 “ ther Natures, and resigns his Form a Sa-
 “ crifice in common to the rest of Things.

* See VOL. III. p. 263, 264. what is cited in the Notes
 from the antient Author on *the World*,

“ And

" And if in Natures so little exalted or Sect. 3.
 " pre-eminent above each other, the Sa-
 " crifice of Interests can appear so just ;
 " how much more reasonably may all in-
 " ferior Natures be subjected to *the supe-*
 " *rior Nature* of the World! That World,
 " PALEMÓN, which even now transport-
 " ed you, when the Sun's fainting Light
 " gave way to these bright Constellations,
 " and left you this wide System to con-
 " template.

" HERE are those *Laws* which ought
 " not, nor can submit to any thing be-
 " low. The central Powers, which hold
 " the lasting Orbs in their just Poize and
 " Movement, must not be controul'd to
 " save a fleeting Form, and rescue from
 " the Precipice a puny Animal, whose
 " brittle Frame, howe'er protected, must
 " of it-self so soon dissolve. The ambient
 " Air, the inward Vapours, the impending
 " Meteors, or whatever else is nutrimental
 " or preservative of this Earth, must
 " operate in a natural Course : and other
 " Constitutions must submit to the good
 " Habit and Constitution of the all-sustain-
 " ing Globe.


" LET us not therefore wonder, if by
 " Earthquakes, Storms, pestilential Blasts,
 " nether or upper Fires, or Floods, the ani-
 " mal Kinds are oft afflicted, and whole
 " Species

Part I. “ Species perhaps involv’d at once in com-
 ~~~~~ “ mon Ruin : But much less let us account  
 Ill natural “ it strange, if either by outward Shock,  
 and moral. “ or some interior Wound from hostile  
 “ Matter, particular Animals are deform’d  
 “ even in their first Conception, when the  
 “ Disease invades the Seats of Generation,  
 “ and seminal Parts are injur’d and obstruc-  
 “ ted in their accurate Labours. ’Tis then  
 “ alone that monstrous Shapes are seen :  
 “ Nature still working as before, and not  
 “ perversly or erroneously ; not faintly, or  
 “ with feeble Endeavours ; but o’erpower’d  
 “ by a *superior Rival*, and by another  
 “ Nature’s *justly* conquering Force.

“ NOR need we wonder, if the inte-  
 “ rior Form, *the Soul and Temper*, par-  
 “ takes of this occasional Deformity, and  
 “ sympathizes often with its close Partner.  
 “ Who is there can wonder either at the  
 “ Sickneses of Sense, or the Depravity of  
 “ Minds inclos’d in such frail Bodys, and  
 “ dependent on such pervertible Organs ?

Good. “ HERE then is that Solution you re-  
 “ quire : and hence those seeming Ble-  
 “ mishes cast upon Nature. Nor is there  
 “ ought in this beside what is natural and  
 “ good. ’Tis *Good* which is predominant ;  
 “ and every corruptible and mortal Na-  
 “ ture by its Mortality and Corruption  
 “ yields only to some better, and all in  
 “ common



“ common to that *best and highest Nature*, Sect. 3.  
 “ which is incorruptible and immortal.” 

I SCARCE had ended these Words, e'er you broke out in admiration; asking what had befall'n me, that of a sudden I had thus chang'd my Character, and enter'd into Thoughts which must certainly, you suppos'd, have some Foundation in me, since I cou'd express them with such seeming Affection as I had done.

O, SAID I, PALEMON! that it had been my fortune to have met you the other day, just at my Return out of the Country, from a *Friend* whose Conversation had in one day or *two* made such an Impression on me, that I shou'd have suted you to a Miracle. You wou'd have thought indeed that I had been cur'd of my *Scepticism* and Levity, so as never to have rally'd more, at that wild rate, on any Subject, much less on these which are so serious.

TRULY, said you, I cou'd wish I had met you rather at that time, or that those good and serious Impressions of your *Friend* had without interruption lasted with you till this moment.

WHATEVER they were, I told you, PALEMON, I had not so lost 'em neither,

Part I. as not easily, you saw, to revive 'em on  
 ~~~~~ occasion; were I not afraid. Afraid!  
 said you. For whose sake, good PHILO-
 CLES, I intreat you? For mine or your
 own? For both, reply'd I. For tho
 I was like to be perfectly cur'd of my *Scep-
 ticism*; 'twas by what I thought worle,
Enthusiast. downright *Enthusiasm*. You never knew
 a more agreeable ENTHUSIAST!

WERE he my Friend (said you) I shou'd
 hardly treat him in so free a manner. Nor
 shou'd I, perhaps, judg that to be *Enthu-
 siasm* which you so freely term so. I have
 a strong suspicion that you injure him. Nor
 can I be satisfy'd till I hear further of that
 serious Conversation for which you tax him
 as *Enthusiastick*.

I MUST confess (said I) he had nothing
 of that savage Air of the vulgar enthu-
 siastick Kind. All was serene, soft, and
 harmonious. The manner of it was more
 after the pleasing Transports of those an-
 cient *Poets* you are often charm'd with,
 than after the fierce unfociable way of mo-
 dern *Zealots*; those starch'd gruff Gentle-
 men, who guard Religion as Bullys do a
 Mistress, and give us the while a very in-
 different Opinion of their Lady's Merit,
 and their own Wit, by adoring what they
 neither allow to be inspect'd by others,
 nor care themselves to examine in a fair
 light.

light. But here I'll answer for it ; there Sect. 3.
 was nothing of Disguise or Paint. All was
 fair, open, and genuine, as Nature her-
 self. 'Twas *Nature* he was in love with :
 'Twas *Nature* he sung : And if any-one
 might be said to have a *natural* Mistress,
 my Friend certainly might, whose Heart
 was thus engag'd. But *Love*, I found,
 was every-where the same. And tho the
 Object ; here was very fine, and the Pas-
 sion it created very noble ; yet *Liberty*, I
 thought, was finer than all : And I who
 never car'd to ingage in other Loves of the
 least continuance, was the more afraid, I
 told you, of this which had such a power
 with my poor *Friend*, as to make him ap-
 pear the perfectest ENTHUSIAST in the
 world, *Ill-humour* only excepted. For this
 was singular in him, " That tho he had
 " all of the *Enthusiast*, he had nothing of
 " the *Bigot*. He heard every thing with
 " Mildness and Delight ; and bore with me
 " when I treated all his Thoughts as visio-
 " nary ; and when, Sceptick-like, I unra-
 " vel'd all his Systems. "

HERE was that *Character* and *Descrip-*
tion which so highly pleas'd you, that you
 wou'd hardly suffer me to come to a con-
 clusion. 'Twas impossible, I found, to
 give you satisfaction, without reciting the
 main of what pass'd in those *two* days be-
 tween my *Friend* and me, in our Country-
 Retire-

Part 1. Retirement. Again and again I bid you
 beware: “ You knew not the danger of
Enthusiast. “ this *philosophical Passion*; nor consider’d
 “ what you might possibly draw upon
 “ your-self, and make me the Author of.
 “ I was far enough engag’d already; and
 “ you were pushing me further, at your
 “ own hazard.”

ALL I cou’d say made not the least
 impression on you. But rather than pro-
 ceed any further this night, I engag’d, for
 your sake, to turn *Writer*, and draw up
 the Memoirs of those *two* philosophical
 Days; beginning with what had pass’d
 this *last* Day between our-selves; as I have
 accordingly done (you see) by way of
Introduction to my Story.

BY this time, being got late to Town,
 some hours after the latest of our Compa-
 ny, you set me down at my own Lodg-
 ing; and thus we bad Good-night.

PART



PART II.

PHILOCLES to PALEMÓN.

AFTER such a Day as Yesterday, I might well have thought it hard, when I awak'd the next Morning, to find my-self under positive Engagements of proceeding in the same philolophical way, without intermission, and upon harder terms than ever. For 'twas no longer the agreeable Part of a *Companion* which I had now to bear. Your Conversation, PALEMÓN, which had hitherto supported me, was at an end. I was now *alone*; confin'd to my Closet; oblig'd to meditate by my-self; and reduc'd to the hard Circumstances of an *Author*, and *Historian*, in the most difficult Subject.

BUT here, methought, propitious Heaven, in some manner, assisted me. For if *Dreams* were, as HOMER teaches, sent from

Part 2. from the Throne of Jove; I might conclude I had a favourable one, of the *true* sort, towards the *Morning-light*; which, as I recollected my-self, gave me a clear and perfect Idea of what I desir'd so earnestly to bring back to my Memory.

I FOUND my-self transported to a distant Country, which presented a pompous *rural Scene*. It was a Mountain not far from the Sea, its Brow adorn'd with antient Wood, and at its foot a River and well-inhabited Plain: beyond which the Sea appearing, clos'd the Prospect.

No sooner had I consider'd the Place, than I discern'd it to be the very same where I had talk'd with THEOCLES the second Day I was with him in the Country. I look'd about to see if I cou'd find my Friend; and calling THEOCLES! I awak'd. But so powerful was the Impression of my Dream, and so perfect the Idea rais'd in me, of the Person, Words, and Manner of my Friend, that I cou'd now fancy my-self philosophically inspir'd, as that ROMAN Sage by his ÆGERIA, and invited, on this occasion, to try my *Historical* MUSE. For justly might I hope for such Assistance in behalf of THEOCLES, who so lov'd *the Muses*, and was, I thought, no less belov'd by them.

TO

TO RETURN therefore to that original rural Scene, and that *Heroick GENIUS*, the Companion and Guide of my first Thoughts in these profounder Subjects: I found him the first Morning with his be-
 lov'd *Mantuan Muse*, roving in the Fields; where, as I had been inform'd at his House, he was gone out, after his usual way, to read. The moment he saw me, his Book vanish'd, and he came with friendly haste to meet me. After we had embrac'd, I discover'd my Curiosity to know what he was reading; and ask'd, "if it were of a secret kind, to which I cou'd not be admitted." On this he shew'd me his Poet; and looking pleasantly, Now tell me truly, said he, *PHILOCLEES*, did you not expect some more mysterious Book than this? I own'd I did, considering his Character, which I took to be of so contemplative a kind. And do you think, said he, that without being contemplative, one can truly relish these diviner Poets? Indeed (said I) I never thought there was any need of growing contemplative, or retiring from the World, to read *VIRGIL* or *HORACE*.

You have nam'd *two*, said he, who *Retire-*
 can hardly be thought so very *like*; tho' *meno.*

Part 2.

Retire-
ment.


they were Friends, and equally good Poets. Yet joining 'em, as you are pleas'd to do, I would willingly learn from you, whether in your opinion there be any Disposition so fitted for reading 'em, as that in which they writ themselves. In this, I am sure, they both join'd heartily; to love *Retirement*: when for the sake of such a Life and Habit as you call *contemplative*, they were willing to sacrifice the highest Advantages, Pleasures, and Favour of a Court. But I will venture to say more in favour of *Retirement*: "That not only the best Authors, but the best Company, require this seasoning." Society it self cannot be rightly enjoy'd without some Abstinence and separate Thought. All grows inspid, dull, and tiresom, without the help of some Intervals of Retirement. Say, PHILOCLES, whether you your-self have not often found it so? Do you think those Lovers understand the Interests of their Loves, who by their good-will would never be parted for a moment? Or would they be discreet Friends, think you, who would chuse to live together on such Terms? What Relish then must the World have (that common World of mix'd and undistinguish'd Company) without a little Solitude; without stepping now and then aside, out of the *Road and beaten Track* of Life, that tedious Circle of Noise and Show, which forces wear'd

ry'd Mankind to seek relief from every poor Diversion? Sect. I.

By your Rule, said I, THEOCLES, there should be no such thing as *Happiness* or *Good* in Life, since every Enjoyment wears out so soon; and growing painful, is diverted by some *other* thing; and that again by some *other*; and so on. I am sure, if Solitude serves as a Remedy or Diversion to any thing in the World, there is nothing which may not serve as Diversion to Solitude; which wants it more than any thing besides. And thus there can be no *Good* which is regular or constant. Happiness is a thing out of the way, and only to be found in wandering.

O PHILOCLES, reply'd he, I rejoice *Happiness.*
to find you in the pursuit of *Happiness* and *Good.*
Good; however you may wander. Nay, tho' you doubt whether there be *that Thing*; yet if you reason, 'tis sufficient; there is hope still. But see how you have unawares engag'd your-self! For if you have destroy'd all *Good*, because in all you can think of, there is nothing will constantly hold so; then you have set it as a Maxim (and very justly in my Opinion) "That
" *Nothing can be good but what is constant.*"

I OWN, said I, that all I know of worldly Satisfaction is inconstant. The

Part 2.

 Happiness.
 Good.

Things which give it, are never at a stay ; and the *Good* it-self, whatever it be, depends no less on Humour than on Fortune. For that which Chance may often spare, Time will not. Age, Change of Temper, other Thoughts, a different Passion, new Engagements, a new Turn of Life, or Conversation, the least of these are fatal, and alone sufficient to destroy Enjoyment. Tho' *the Object* be the same, *the Relish* changes, and the short-liv'd *Good* expires. But I shou'd wonder much if you cou'd tell me any thing in Life which was not of as changeable a Nature, and subject to the same common Fate of Satiety and Disgust.

Pleasure.

I FIND then, reply'd he, that the current Notion of *Good* is not sufficient to satisfy you. You can afford to *scepticize*, where no-one else will so much as hesitate. For almost every-one philosophizes dogmatically on this Head. All are positive in this, " That our real *Good* is PLEASURE."

IF they wou'd inform us " *Which* (said I) or *What sort*," and ascertain once the very Species and distinct Kind ; such as must constantly remain *the same*, and *equally eligible* at all times ; I shou'd then perhaps be better satisfy'd. But when *Will* and *Pleasure* are synonymous ; when every thing

thing which * *pleases us* is call'd PLEASURE. Sect. I.
 SURE, and we never chuse or prefer but *as we please*, 'tis trifling to say, "*Pleasure is our Good.*" For this has as little meaning as to say, "*We chuse what we think eligible:*" and, "*We are pleas'd with what delights or pleases us.*" The Question is, "Whether we are *rightly pleas'd*, and "chuse as we *shou'd* do?" For as highly *pleas'd* as Children are with Baubles, or with whatever affects their tender Senses; we cannot in our Hearts sincerely admire their *Enjoyment*, or imagine 'em Possessors of any extraordinary *Good*. Yet are their Senses, we know, as keen and susceptible of *Pleasure* as our own. The same Reflection is of force as to mere Animals, who in respect of the Liveliness and Delicacy of Sensation, have many of 'em the advantage of us. And as for some low and sordid *Pleasures* of human Kind; shou'd they be ever so lastingly enjoy'd, and in the highest credit with their Enjoyers; I shou'd never afford 'em the name of *Happiness* or *Good*.

WOULD you then appeal, said he, from the immediate Feeling and Experience of one who is *pleas'd*, and satisfy'd with what he *enjoys*?

MOST certainly I shou'd appeal, said I (continuing the same Zeal which THEOCLES had stirr'd in me, against those Dogmatizers on *Pleasure*.) For is there that sordid Creature on earth, who does not prize his own *Enjoyment*? Does not the frowardest, the most rancorous distemper'd Creature do as much? Is not Malice and Cruelty of the highest relish with some Natures? Is not a hoggish Life the height of some Mens Wishes? You wou'd not ask me surely to enumerate the several Species of Sensations, which Men of certain Tastes have adopted, and own'd for their chief *Pleasure* and Delight. For with some Men even Diseases have been thought valuable and worth the cherishing, merely for the Pleasure found in allaying the Ardor of an irritating Sensation. And to these absurd *Epicures* those other are near a-kin, who by study'd Provocatives raise unnatural Thirst and Appetite; and to make way for fresh Repletion, prepare *Emeticks*, as the last Desert; the sooner to renew the Feast. 'Tis said, I know, proverbially, "That *Tastes are different, and must not be disputed*." And I remember some such Motto as this plac'd once on a Devise, which was found futable to the Notion. A *Fly* was represented feeding on a certain Lump. The Food, however vile, was natural to the Animal. There was no Ab-

furdity



furdry in the case. But shou'd you shew me a brutish or a barbarous Man thus taken up, and solac'd in his Pleasure; shou'd you shew me a Sot in his solitary Debauch; or a Tyrant in the exercise of his Cruelty, with this *Motto* over him, to forbid my Appeal; I shou'd hardly be brought to think the better of his *Enjoyment*: Nor can I possibly suppose that a mere fordid Wretch, with a base abject Soul, and the best Fortune in the World, was ever capable of any *real Enjoyment*.

By this Zeal, reply'd THEOCLES, which you have shewn in the refuting a *wrong Hypothesis*, one wou'd imagine you had in reality some Notion of a *right*; and began to think that there might possibly be such a thing at last as *Good*.

THAT there is something nearer to *Good*, and more like it than another, I am free, said I, to own. But what *real Good* is, I am still to seek, and must therefore wait till you can better inform me. This I only know; "That either " All Pleasure is Good, or only Some." If *all*, then every kind of Sensuality must be precious and desirable. If *some* only, then we are to seek, *what Kind*; and discover, if we can, *what* it is which distinguishes between one Pleasure and another: and makes *one* indifferent, sorry, mean;

Part 2. *another* valuable, and worthy. And by this *Stamp*, this *Character*, if there be any such, we must define GOOD; and not by *Pleasure* it-self; which may be very great, and yet very contemptible. Nor can any-one truly judge the Value of any immediate Sensation, otherwise than by judging first of the Situation of his own Mind. For that which we esteem a Happiness in *one* Situation of Mind, is otherwise thought of in *another*. Which Situation therefore is the justest, must be consider'd; "How
 " to gain that *Point of Sight*, whence
 " probably we may best discern; and How
 " to place our-selves in that unbiass'd
 " State, in which we are fittest to pronounce."

O PHILOCLEES, reply'd he, if this be unfeignedly your Sentiment; if it be possible you shou'd have the Fortitude to with-hold your * Assent in this Affair; and go in search of what the meanest of Mankind think they already *know* so certainly; 'tis from a nobler Turn of Thought than what you have observ'd in any of the *modern Scepticks* you have convers'd with. For if I mistake not, there are hardly anywhere at this day a sort of People more peremptory, or who deliberate less on the

choice of *Good*. They who pretend to Sect. 1.
 such a Scrutiny of other Evidences, are
 the readiest to take the Evidence of the
 greatest *Deceivers* in the World, *their own*
Passions. Having gain'd, as they think, a
 Liberty from some seeming Constraints of
 Religion, they suppose they employ this
 Liberty to perfection, by following the
 first Motion of their Will, and assenting to
 the first Dictate or Report of any prepos-
 sessing * *Fancy*, any foremost *Opinion* or
Conceit of *GOOD*. So that their Privilege
 is only that of being perpetually amus'd ;
 and their Liberty that of being impos'd on
 in their most important Choice. I think
 one may say with assurance, " That the
 " greatest of Fools is he who imposes on
 " himself, and in his greatest Concern
 " thinks certainly he *knows* that which he
 " has least study'd, and of which he is
 " most profoundly *ignorant*." He who is
 ignorant, but knows his Ignorance, is far
 wiser. And to do justice to these fashiona-
 ble Men of Wit ; they are not all of 'em,
 indeed, so insensible as not to perceive
 something of their own Blindness and
 Absurdity. For often when they seriously
 reflect on their past Pursuits and Engage-
 ments, they freely own, " That for what
 " remains of *Life*, they know not whe-

Part 2. "ther they shall be of *a-piece with them-*
~ " *selves*; or whether their Fancy, Hu-
 ~~~~~ *pleasure.* " mour, or Passion will not hereafter lead  
 " 'em to a quite *different Choice* in PLEA-  
 " SURE, and to a Disapprobation of all  
 " they ever enjoy'd before."—Comforta-  
 ble Reflection!

To bring the Satisfactions of *the Mind*, continu'd he, and the Enjoyments of *Reason* and *Judgment* under the Denomination of PLEASURE, is only a Collusion, and a plain receding from the common Notion of the word. They deal not fairly with us, who in their philosophical Hour, admit that for *Pleasure*, which at an ordinary time, and in the common Practice of Life, is so little taken for such. The Mathematician who labours at this Problem, the bookish Man who toils, the Artift who endures voluntarily the greatest Hardships and Fatigues; none of these are said "*To follow Pleasure*." Nor will the Men of Pleasure by any means admit 'em to be of their number. The Satisfactions which are *purely mental*, and depend only on the Motion of a *Thought*; must in all likelihood be too refin'd for the Apprehensions of our modern *Epicures*, who are so taken up with Pleasure of a *more substantial* kind. They who are full of the Idea of such a *sensible-solid* Good, can have but a slender Fancy for the mere *spiritual* and *intellectual* sort.



fort. But 'tis this latter they set up and magnify upon occasion; to save the Ignominy which may redound to 'em from the former. This done, the latter may take its chance: Its Use is presently at an end. For 'tis observable, that when the Men of this sort have recommended the Enjoyments of the Mind under the title of *Pleasure*; when they have thus dignify'd the Word, and included in it whatever is mentally good or excellent, they can afterwards suffer it contentedly to slide down again into its own genuine and vulgar Sense; whence they rais'd it only to serve a turn. When *Pleasure* is call'd in question, and attack'd, then *Reason* and *Virtue* are call'd in to her Aid, and made principal parts of her Constitution. A complicated Form appears, and comprehends straight all which is generous, honest, and beautiful in human Life. But when the Attack is over, and the Objection once solv'd, the Specter vanishes; *Pleasure* returns again to her former Shape: She may even be *Pleasure* still, and have, as little concern with dry sober *Reason*, as in the nature of the thing, and according to common Understanding, she really has. For if this rational sort of Enjoyment be admitted into the Notion of *Good*, how is it possible to admit withal that kind of Sensation which in effect is rather opposite to this Enjoyment? 'Tis certain that in respect

Part 2. respect of the Mind and its Enjoyments, the Eagerness and Irritation of *mere Pleasure*, is as disturbing as the Importunity and Vexation of *Pain*. If *either* throws the Mind off its bias, and deprives it of the Satisfaction it takes in its natural Exercise and Employment; the Mind in this case must be Sufferer as well by one as by the other. If *neither* does this, there is no harm on either side.—

*Pleasure  
and Pain.*

By the way, said I, interrupting him; As sincere as I am in questioning, “Whether PLEASURE be really *Good*,” I am not such a Sceptick as to doubt “Whether PAIN be really *Ill*.”


WHATEVER is *grievous*, reply'd he, can be no other than ILL. But that what is *grievous* to *one*, is not so much as troublesome to *another*; let Sportsmen, Soldiers, and others of the hardy Kinds be witness. Nay, that what is *Pain* to one, is *Pleasure* to another, and so alternately, we very well know: since Men vary in their Apprehension of these Sensations, and on many occasions confound one with the other. Has not even Nature her-self, in some respects, as it were blended 'em together, and (as a wise Man said once) “join'd the Extremity of one so nicely to the other; that it absolutely

" solutely runs into it, and is undistin- Sect. 1.  
 " guishable ? "

IN FINE then, said I, if *Pleasure* and *Pain* be thus convertible and mix'd ; if, according to your Account, " That which  
 " is now *Pleasure*, by being strain'd a lit-  
 " tle too far, runs into *Pain*, and *Pain*,  
 " when carry'd far, creates again the  
 " highest *Pleasure*, by mere Cessation,  
 " and a kind of natural Succession ; If  
 " some Pleasures to *some* are Pains, and  
 " some Pains to *others* are Pleasures : " All  
 this, if I mistake not, makes still for my  
 Opinion, and shows That there is nothing  
 you can assign which can really stand as  
 GOOD. For if *Pleasure* be not GOOD, *Good*  
 nothing is. And if *Pain* be ILL (as I  
 must necessarily take for granted) we  
 have a shreud Chance on the *ill* side  
 indeed, but none at all on the *better*.  
 So that we may fairly doubt, " Whe-  
 " ther LIFE *it-self* be not mere Mife-  
 " ry ; " since *Gainers* by it we can never  
 be : *Losers* we may sufficiently, and are  
 like to be, every hour of our Lives. Ac-  
 cordingly, what our *English* Poetess says  
 of Good, shou'd be just and proper : " 'Tis  
 good not to be born. " — And thus for any  
 thing of *Good* which can be expected in  
 Life, we may e'en " Beg pardon of Na-  
 " ture ; and return her Present on her  
 " hands,

Part 2. "hands, without waiting for her Call."  
 Good. For what should hinder us? or What are we the better for living?

THE Query, said he, is pertinent. But why such Dispatch, if the Case be doubtful? This, surely (my good PHILO-CLES!) is a plain Transgression of your *sceptical* Bounds. We must be sufficiently *dogmatical*, to come to this Determination. 'Tis a deciding as well concerning Death as Life; "What possibly *may* be hereafter, and What *not*." Now to be assur'd that we can never be concern'd in any thing *hereafter*, we must understand perfectly what it is which concerns or engages us in any thing *present*. We must truly *know our-selves*, and in what this SELF of ours consists. We must determine against *Pre-existence*, and give a better reason for our having never been concern'd in ought before our Birth, than merely, "Because we *remember not*, nor are *conscious*." For in many things we have been concern'd to purpose, of which we have now no Memory or Consciousness remaining. And thus we may happen to be again and again, to perpetuity, for any reason we can shew to the contrary. All is *Revolution* in us. We are no more the self-same Matter, or System of Matter, from one day to another. What Succession there may be *hereafter*,

after, we know not; since even *now*, we Sect. 1.  
 live by Succession, and only perish and   
 are renew'd. 'Tis in vain we flatter our-  
 selves with the assurance of our Interest's  
 ending with a certain Shape or Form.  
 What interested us *at first* in it, we know  
 not; any more than how we have *since*  
 held on, and continue *still* concern'd in  
 such an Assemblage of fleeting Particles.  
*Where* besides, or in *What* else we may *Futurity*  
 have to do, perchance, in time to come,  
 we know as little; nor can tell how  
*Chance* or *Providence*, hereafter, may dis-  
 pose of us. And if *Providence* be in the  
 case, we have still more reason to con-  
 sider how we undertake to be our own  
 Disposers. It must needs become a SCEP-  
 TICK above all Men to hesitate in Mat-  
 ters of *Exchange*. And tho he acknow-  
 ledges no present Good or Enjoyment in  
 Life, he must be sure, however, of bet-  
 tering his Condition, before he attempts  
 to alter it. But as yet, PHILOCLES,  
 even this Point remains undetermin'd be-  
 tween us: "Whether in this present *Good*,  
 " Life there be not such a thing as *real*  
 " *GOOD*."

BE you therefore (said I) my Instruc-  
 tor, sagacious THEOCLES! and inform  
 me " *What* that *GOOD* is, or *Where*,  
 " which can afford Contentment and Sa-  
 " tisfaction always alike, without varia-  
 " tion

Part 2.

Good.

“tion or diminution.” For tho on some Occasions, and in some Subjects, the Mind may possibly be so bent, and the Passion so wrought up, that for the time no bodily Sufferance or Pain can alter it; yet this is what can seldom happen, and is unlikely to last long: since without any Pain or Inconvenience, the Passion in a little time does its own work, the Mind relaxes with its Bent, and the Temper weary’d with Repetition finds no more Enjoyment, but runs to something new.

HEAR then! said THEOCLES. For tho I pretend not to tell you at once the Nature of this which I call GOOD; yet I am content to shew you something of it, in *your-self*, which you will acknowledge to be naturally more fix’d and constant, than any thing you have hitherto thought on. Tell me, my Friend! if ever you were weary of doing good to those you lov’d? Say when you ever found it unpleasing to serve a *Friend*? Or whether when you *first* prov’d this generous Pleasure, you did not feel it less than at *this present*; after so long Experience? Believe me, PHILOCLES, this Pleasure is more debauching than any other. Never did any Soul do good, but it came readier to do the same again, with more Enjoyment. Never was Love, or Gratitude, or Bounty

Bounty practis'd but with increasing Joy, Sect. 1.  
 which made the Practiser still more in love <sup>Friendship</sup>  
 with the fair Act. Answer me, PHILO- <sup>private,</sup>  
 CLES, you who are such a Judge of *Beauty*, <sup>publick.</sup>  
 and have so good a *Taste* of Pleasure; is  
 there any thing you admire, so fair as  
*Friendship*? or any thing so charming as a  
*generous Action*? What wou'd it be there-  
 fore, if all Life were in reality but one con-  
 tinu'd Friendship, and cou'd be made one  
 such intire Act? Here surely wou'd be that  
*fix'd and constant Good* you sought. Or  
 wou'd you look for any thing beyond?

PERHAPS not, said I. But I can ne-  
 ver, surely, go beyond this, to seek for a  
*Chimera*, if this GOOD of yours be not  
 thorowly chimerical. For tho a Poet may  
 possibly work up such a single Action, so as  
 to hold a *Play* out; I can conceive but  
 very faintly how this high Strain of Friend-  
 ship can be so manag'd, as to fill a *Life*.  
 Nor can I imagine where the Object lies of  
 such a sublime heroick Passion.

CAN any Friendship, said he, be so  
 heroick, as that towards Mankind? Do  
 you think the Love of Friends in general,  
 and of one's Country, to be nothing? or  
 that particular Friendship can well subsist  
 without such an enlarg'd Affection, and  
 Sense of Obligation to Society? Say (if  
 possible) you are a *Friend*, but hate your

Part 2. *Country.* Say, you are true to the Interest of a *Companion*, but false to that of *Society*. Can you believe your-self? Or will you lay the Name aside, and refuse to be call'd *the Friend*, since you renounce *the MAN*?

Friendship  
private,  
publick.

THAT there is something, said I, due to *Mankind*, is what I think will not be disputed by one who claims the Name of *Friend*. Hardly indeed cou'd I allow the Name of *Man* to one who never cou'd call or be call'd *Friend*. But he who justly proves himself a *Friend*, is *MAN* enough; nor is he wanting to *Society*. A single Friendship may acquit him. He has deserv'd a Friend, and is *Man's Friend*; tho not in strictness, or according to your high moral Sense, *the Friend of Mankind*. For to say truth, as to this sort of Friendship; it may by wiser Heads be esteem'd perhaps more than ordinarily manly, and even heroick, as you assert it: But for my part, I see so very little Worth in *Mankind*, and have so indifferent an Opinion of *the Publick*, that I can propose little Satisfaction to my-self in loving *either*.

*Gratitude.* Do you, then, take *Bounty* and *Gratitude* to be among the Acts of Friendship and Good-nature? Undoubtedly: For they are the chief. Suppose then, that the oblig'd Person discovers in the Obliger



Obliger several Failings; does this exclude Sect. 1.  
*the Gratitude* of the former? Not in  
 the least.

Or does it make *the Exer-*  
*cise* of Gratitude less pleasing? I think  
 rather the contrary. For when depriv'd of  
 other means of making a Return, I might  
 rejoice still in that sure way of shewing my  
 Gratitude to my Benefactor, by bearing  
 his Failings as a Friend.

And as to *Bounty*: Tell me, I beseech you, is it to *Bounty*  
 those only who are *deserving* that we  
 shou'd do good? Is it only to a *good*  
 Neighbour, or Relation, a *good* Father,  
 Child, or Brother? Or does Nature, Rea-  
 son, and Humanity better teach us, to do  
 good still to a Father, because a *Father*;  
 and to a Child, because a *Child*; and so to  
 every Relation in human Life? I think,  
 said I, this last is rightest.

O PHILOCLES, reply'd he, consider  
 then what it was you said, when you ob-  
 jected against the Love of *Mankind* because  
 of human Frailty; and seem'd to scorn  
 the *Publick*, because of its Misfortunes.  
 See if this Sentiment be consistent with  
 that Humanity which elsewhere you own  
 and practise. For where can Generosity  
 exist, if not here? Where can we ever  
 exert Friendship, if not in this chief Sub-  
 ject? To what shou'd we be true or  
 grateful in the World, if not to *Mankind*, *Love of*  
 and that Society to which we are so deep-  
 ly

Part 2. ly indebted? What are the Faults or Blemishes which can excuse such an Omis-  
 sion, or in a grateful Mind can ever lessen the Satisfaction of making a grateful  
 kind return? Can you then out of *Good-breeding* merely, and from a Temper natural to you, rejoice to shew Civility, Courteousness, Obligingness, seek Objects of Compassion, and be pleas'd with every Occurrence where you have power to do some service even to People unknown? Can you delight in such Adventures abroad in foreign Countrys, or in the case of Strangers here at home; to help, assist, relieve all who require it, in the most hospitable, kind, and friendly manner? And can *your Country*, or what is more, *your* KIND, require less Kindness from you, or deserve less to be consider'd, than even one of these Chance-Creatures? —  
 O PHILOCTES! how little do you know the Extent and Power of *Good-nature*, and to what an heroick pitch a Soul may rise, which knows the thorow Force of it; and distributing it rightly, frames in it-self an equal, just, and universal Friendship!

JUST as he had ended these Words, a Servant came to us in the Field, to give notice of some Company, who were come to dine with us, and waited our coming in.

in. So we walk'd home-wards. I told THEOCLES, going along, that I fear'd I shou'd never make a good *Friend* or *Lo-ver* after his way. As for a plain natural Love of *one single* Person in either Sex, I cou'd compass it, I thought, well enough; but this *complex universal* sort was beyond my reach. I cou'd love the Individual, but not the Species. This was too mysterious; too metaphysical an Object for me. In short, I cou'd love nothing of which I had not some sensible material Image.

*Mystical  
Love.*

How! reply'd THEOCLES, can you never love except in this manner? when yet I know that you admir'd and lov'd a Friend long e'er you knew his Person. Or was PALEMEN's Character of no force, when it engag'd you in that long Correspondence which preceded your *late* personal Acquaintance?

The Fact (said I) I must, of necessity, own to you. And now, methinks, I understand your Mystery, and perceive how I must prepare for it: For in the same manner as when I first began to love PALEMEN, I was forc'd to form a kind of material Object, and had always such a certain Image of him, ready-drawn, in my Mind, whenever I thought of him; so I must endeavour to order it in the Case before us; if possibly by your help I can raise any

Part 2. such Image, or Specter, as may represent  
 this odd Being you wou'd have me love.

METHINKS, said he, you might have the same Indulgence for NATURE of MANKIND, as for *the People of old ROME*; whom, notwithstanding their Blemishes, I have known you in love with, many ways; particularly under the Representation of a beautiful Youth call'd *the GENIUS of the People*. For I remember, that viewing once some Pieces of Antiquity, where the People were thus represented, you allow'd 'em to be no disagreeable Object.

*Genius of a  
Country.*

*Nature.*

INDEED, reply'd I, were it possible for me to stamp upon my Mind such a Figure as you speak of, whether it stood for *Mankind or Nature*, it might probably have its effect; and I might become perhaps a *Lover* after your way: But more especially, if you cou'd so order it, as to make things reciprocal between us, and bring me to fancy of this GENIUS, that it cou'd be "sensible of my Love, and capable of a *Return*." For without this, I shou'd make but an ill Lover, tho' of the perfectest Beauty in the World.

'Tis enough, said THEOCLES, I accept the Terms: And if you promise to love; I will endeavour to shew you that  
 BEAUTY

BEAUTY which I count *the perfectest*, Sect. 2.  
 and *most deserving of LOVE*; and which will not fail of a *Return*.—To-morrow, when the eastern Sun (as Poets describe) with his first Beams adorns the Front of yonder Hill; there, if you are content to wander with me in the Woods you see, we will pursue those *Loves* of ours, by favour of the Silvan Nymphs: and invoking first *the Genius of the Place*, we'll try to obtain at least some faint and distant View of *the sovereign* GENIUS and *first Beauty*. Genius of the World. This if you can come once to contemplate, I will answer for it, that all those forbidding Features and Deformitys, whether of *Nature* or *Mankind*, will vanish in an instant, and leave you that *Lover* I cou'd wish.—But now, enough!—Let us to our *Company*; and change this Conversation for some other more suitable to our *Friends* and *Table*.

## S E C T. II.

YOU see here, PALEMON, what a Foundation is laid for the *Enthusiasms* I told you of; and which, in my Opinion (I told you too) were the more dangerous, because so very odd, and out of the way. But Curiosity had seiz'd you, I perceiv'd, as it had done me before. For after this first Conversation, I must own, I long'd

Part 2. for nothing so much as the next day, and  
 the appointed Morning-walk in the Woods.

WE had only a Friend or two at dinner with us ; and for a good while we discours'd of News and indifferent things, till I, who had my head still running upon those other Subjects, gladly laid hold of something dropt by chance concerning *Friendship*. *Friendship* ; and said, That for my own part, truly, tho I once thought I had known Friendship, and really counted myself *a good Friend* during my whole Life ; yet I was now perswaded to believe myself no better than *a Learner* : since THEOCLES had almost convinc'd me, " That to " be a *Friend* to any one *in particular*, " 'twas necessary to be first *a Friend* to " *Mankind*." But how to qualify myself for such a Friendship, was, methought, no little difficulty.

INDEED, said THEOCLES, you have given us a very indifferent Character of your-self, in saying so. If you had spoken thus of the Friendship of any *great Man* at Court, or perhaps of *a Court* it-self, and had complain'd " How hard it was " for you to succeed, or make Interest " with such as govern'd there ; " we shoud have concluded in your behalf, that there were such Terms to be comply'd with, as were unworthy of you. But " To

“To deserve well of *the Publick*,” and Sect. 2.  
 “To be justly stil’d *the Friend of Man-*  
*kind*,” requires no more than to be good <sup>*Virtue.*</sup>  
 and *virtuous*; Terms which for one’s own  
 sake one wou’d naturally covet.

How comes it then, said I, that even <sup>*Motives;*</sup>  
 these *good Terms* themselves are so ill ac-  
 cepted, and hardly ever taken (if I may so  
 express it) except on *further Terms*? For  
 VIRTUE, *by it-self*, is thought but an ill  
 Bargain: and I know few, even of the Re-  
 ligious and Devout, who take up with it  
 any otherwise than as Children do with  
 Physick; where the Rod and Sweetmeat  
 are the potent Motives.

THEY are Children indeed, reply’d  
 THEOCLES, and shou’d be treated so,  
 who need any Force or Persuasion to do  
 what conduces to their Health and Good,  
 But, where, I beseech you, are those for-  
 bidding Circumstances which shou’d make  
*Virtue* go down so hardly? Is it not, a-  
 mong other things, that you think your-  
 self by this means precluded the fine Ta-  
 bles and costly Eating of our modern *Epi-*  
*cures*; and that perhaps you fear the being  
 reduc’d to eat always as ill as now, upon a  
 plain Dish or two, and no more?

THIS, I protested, was injuriously sup-  
 pos’d of me. For I wish’d never to eat  
 otherwise

Part 2. otherwise than I now did, at his Table; which, by the way, had more resemblance (I thought) of EPICURUS's, than those which now-a-days preposterously pass'd under his name. For if his Opinion might be taken, the highest Pleasures in the World were owing to *Temperance*, and moderate Use.

*Temperance.*

IF then the merest Studier of *Pleasure*; (answer'd THEOCLES) even EPICURUS himself, made that favourable Report of *Temperance*; so different from his modern Disciples; if he cou'd boldly say, "That with such Fare as a mean Garden afforded, he cou'd vie even with the Gods for Happiness;" how shall we say of this part of Virtue, that it needs be taken upon Terms? If the immediate Practice of *Temperance* be thus harmless; are its Consequences injurious? Does it take from the Vigour of the Mind, consume the Body, and render both the one and the other less apt to their proper Exercises, "the Enjoyments of Reason or Sense, or the Employments and Offices of civil Life?" Or is it that a Man's Circumstances are the worse for it, as he stands towards his Friends, or Mankind? Is a Gentleman in this sense to be pity'd; "As One burdensom to himself, and others; One whom all Men will naturally shun, as an ill Friend, and a Corrupter of

" of



“ of Society and Good Manners ? ” — Shall Sect. 2.  
 we consider our Gentleman in a *publick* Trust, and see whether he is like to succeed best with this restraining Quality ; or whether he may be more rely'd on, and thought more incorrupt, if his Appetites are high, and his Relish strong towards that which we call Pleasure ? Shall we consider him as a *Soldier*, in a Campaign, or Siege ; and advise with our-selves how we might be best defended, if we had occasion for such a one's Service ? “ Which Officer wou'd make the best for the Soldiers ; Which Soldier for the Officers ; or Which Army for their Country ? ” — What think you of our Gentleman, for a *Fellow-traveller* ? Wou'd he, as a temperate Man, be an ill Choice ? Wou'd it indeed be more eligible and delightful “ To have a Companion, who, in any shift or necessity, wou'd prove the most ravenous, and eager to provide in the first place for himself, and his own exquisite Sensations ? ” — I know not what to say where *Beauty* is concern'd. Perhaps the *amorous Galants*, and exquisite *Refiners* on this sort of Pleasure, may have so refin'd their Minds and Tempers, that, notwithstanding their accusom'd Indulgence, they can, upon occasion, renounce their Enjoyment, rather than violate Honour, Faith, or Justice. — And thus, at last, there will be little Virtue or Worth ascrib'd

Part 2. ascrib'd to this patient sober *Character*.

Tempe-  
rance.

“ The dull *temperate Man* is no fitter to  
 “ be trusted than the elegant *luxurious one*.  
 “ Innocence, Youth, and Fortune may be  
 “ as well committed to the Care of this  
 “ latter Gentleman. He wou'd prove as  
 “ good an *Executor*, as good a *Trustee*,  
 “ as good a *Guardian*, as he wou'd a  
 “ *Friend*. The Family which entrusted  
 “ him wou'd be secure; and no Dishonour,  
 “ in any likelihood, wou'd happen from  
 “ the honest *Man of Pleasure*. ”

THE Seriousness with which THE  
 OCLES spoke this, made it the more  
 pleasant; and set our other Company up-  
 on saying a great many good things on the  
 same Subject, in commendation of a *tempe-  
 rate Life*. So that our Dinner by this  
 time being ended, and the Wine, accord-  
 ing to Custom, plac'd before us; I found  
 still we were in no liklihood of proceed-  
 ing to a Debauch. Every-one drank only  
 as he fancy'd, in no Order or Proportion,  
 and with no regard to circular Healths or  
 Pledges: A Manner which the sociable  
 Men of another Scheme of Morals wou'd  
 have censur'd no doubt, as a heinous Ir-  
 regularity, and Corruption of *Good-Fel-  
 lowship*.

I OWN

I OWN (said I) I am far from thinking. TEMPERANCE so disagreeable a Character. As for this part of Virtue, I think there is no need of taking it on any other *Terms* to recommend it, than the mere Advantage of being sav'd from Intemperance, and from the desire of things unnecessary.

How! said THEOCLES, are you thus far advanc'd? And can you carry this *Temperance* so far as to Estates and Honours, by opposing it to *Avarice* and *Ambition*?—Nay, then truly, you may be said to have fairly embark'd your-self in this Cause. You have pass'd the Channel, and are more than half-seas over. There remains no further Scruple in the case of Virtue, unless you will declare your-self a *Coward*, or conclude it a happiness to be born one. For if you can be *temperate* withal towards LIFE, and think it not so great a business, whether *it* be of fewer or more Years; but satisfy'd with what you have liv'd, can rise a thankful Guest from a full liberal Entertainment; Is not this the Sum of all? the finishing Stroke and very Accomplishment of *Virtue*? In this Temper of Mind, what is there can hinder us from forming for our-selves as heroick a *Character* as we please? What is there either *good*, *generous*, or *great*, which

Part 2. which does not naturally flow from such a modest TEMPERANCE? Let us once gain this simple plain-look'd *Virtue*, and see whether the more shining *Virtues* will not follow. See what that *Country of the Mind* will produce, when by the wholesom Laws of this Legislature it has obtain'd its *Liberty*! You, PHILOCLES, who are such an Admirer of *Civil Liberty*, and can represent it to your-self with a thousand several Graces and Advantages; can you imagine no Grace or Beauty in that original *native Liberty*, which sets us free from so many in-born Tyrannys, gives us the Privilege of our-selves, and makes us *our own*, and independent? A sort of Property, which, methinks, is as material to us to the full, as that which secures us our Lands, or Revenues.

LIBER-  
TY,  
Civil.

Moral.

I shou'd think, said he (carrying on his Humour) that one might draw the Picture of this *moral* Dame to as much advantage as that of her *political* Sister; whom you admire, as describ'd to us "in her *AMAZON-Dress*, with a free manly Air becoming her; her Guards the *Laws*, with their written Tables, like Bucklers, surrounding her; Riches, Traffick, and Plenty, with the *Cornucopia*, serving as her Attendants; and in her Train the *Arts and Sciences*, like Children, playing."—The rest of the Piece  
is

is easy to imagine: " Her Triumph over Sect. 2.  
 " Tyranny, and lawless Rule of Lust and  
 " Passion."——But what a Triumph wou'd  
 her Sister's be! What Monsters of savage  
 Passions wou'd there appear subdu'd!  
 " There fierce *Ambition, Lust, Uproar,*  
 " *Misrule*, with all the *Fiends* which rage  
 " in human Breasts, wou'd be securely  
 " chain'd. And when *Fortune* her-self, the  
 " Queen of Flatterys, with that Prince of  
 " Terrors, *Death*, were at the Chariot-  
 " wheels, as Captives; how natural wou'd  
 " it be to see *Fortitude, Magnanimity,*  
 " *Justice, Honour*, and all that generous  
 " Band attend as the Companions of our in-  
 " mate Lady LIBERTY! She, like some  
 " new-born Goddess, wou'd grace her Mo-  
 " ther's Chariot, and own her Birth from  
 " humble *Temperance*, that nursing Mo-  
 " ther of the Virtues; who like the Parent  
 " of the Gods (old Reverend CYBELE)  
 " wou'd properly appear drawn by rein'd  
 " Lions, patient of the Bit, and on her  
 " Head a Turret-like Attire: the Image  
 " of defensive Power, and Strength of  
 " Mind."

BY THIS Picture THEOCLES, I  
 found, had given Entertainment to the  
 Company; who from this rough Draught  
 of his, fell to designing upon the same  
 Subject, after the antient manner; till  
 PRO-

Part 2. PRODICUS and CEBES, and all the Antients were exhausted.

VIRTUE. GENTLEMEN, said I, the Descriptions you have been making, are, no doubt, the finest in the world: But after all, when you have made *Virtue* as glorious and triumphant as you please, I will bring you an authentick Picture of another kind, where we shall see this Triumph in reverse; “VIRTUE her-self a *Captive* in her turn; and by a proud Conqueror triumph’d over, degraded, spoil’d of all her Honours, and defac’d; so as to retain hardly one single Feature of real Beauty.”——

I OFFER’D to go on further, but cou’d not, being so violently decry’d by my two Fellow-guests; who protested they wou’d never be brought to own so detestable a Picture: And one of ’em (a formal sort of Gentleman, somewhat advanc’d in Years) looking earnestly upon me, said, in an angry Tone, “That he had hitherto, indeed, conceiv’d some hopes of me; notwithstanding he observ’d my *Freedom of Thought*, and heard me quoted for such a passionate Lover of *Liberty*: But he was sorry to find that my Principle of Liberty extended in fine to a *Liberty from all Principles*” (so he express’d himself) “And none, he thought, beside

“ beside a Libertine in Principle wou’d ap- Sect. 3.  
 “ prove of such a Picture of Virtue, as on-  
 “ ly an *Atheist* cou’d have the impudence  
 “ to make.”

THEOCLES the while sat silent; tho he  
 saw I minded not my Antagonist, but kept  
 my Eye fix’d steddily on himself, expecting  
 to hear what he wou’d say. At last, fetch-  
 ing a deep Sigh, O PHILOCLEES, said  
 he, how well you are Master of that  
 Cause you have taken on you to defend!  
 How well you know the way to gain ad-  
 vantage to the worst of Causes, from the  
 imprudent Management of those who de-  
 fend the best!——I dare not, for my own  
 share, affirm to you, as my worthy Friends  
 have done, “ That ‘tis the *Atheist* alone  
 “ can lay this load on *Virtue*, and picture  
 “ her thus disgracefully.”——No——  
 There are other over-officious and less-sus-  
 pected Hands, which do her perhaps more  
 injury, tho with a better colour.

THAT *Virtue* shou’d, with any shew  
 of Reason, be made a *Victim* (contin’d  
 he, turning himself to his Guests) must  
 have appear’d strange to you, no doubt,  
 to hear asserted with such assurance as has  
 been done by PHILOCLEES. You cou’d  
 conceive no tolerable ground for such a  
 Spectacle. In this *revers’d Triumph* you  
 expected perhaps to see some foreign Con-

Part 2. queror exalted; as either *Vice* it-self, or *Pleasure*, *Wit*, *spurious Philosophy*, or some *false Image* of *Truth* or *Nature*. Little were you aware that the cruel Enemy oppos'd to *Virtue* shou'd be **RELIGION** it-self! But you will call to mind, that even innocently, and without any treacherous design, *Virtue* is often treated so, by those who wou'd magnify to the utmost the Corruption of Man's Heart; and in exposing, as they pretend, the Falseness of *human Virtue*, think to extol *Religion*. How many religious Authors, how many sacred Orators turn all their edge this way, and strike at *moral Virtue* as a kind of *Step-dame*, or *Rival* to **RELIGION**! —“ \* *Morality* must not be nam'd; *Nature* has no pretence; *Reason* is an Enemy; *Common Justice*, Folly; and *Virtue*, Misery. Who wou'd not be vitious, had he his Choice? Who wou'd forbear, but because *he must*? Or who wou'd value *Virtue*, but for *hereafter*? ”——

Religion  
and Vir-  
tue.

Zeal.

TRULY, said the old Gentleman (interrupting him) if this be the *Triumph* of Religion, 'tis such as her greatest Enemy, I believe, wou'd scarce deny her: and I must still be of opinion (with **PHILOSOPHERS**'s leave) that it is no great sign of *Tenderness* for *Religion*, to be so zealous in honouring her at the cost of *Virtue*.

\* VOL. III. pag. 310.



PERHAPS so, said I. Yet that there are many such Zealots in the World, you will acknowledg. And that there is a certain Harmony between this *Zeal* and what you call *Atheism*, THEOCLES, you hear, has allow'd.—But let us hear him out; if perhaps he will be so free as to discover to us what he thinks of the generality of our religious Writers, and their Method of encountering their common Enemy, *the Atheist*. This is a Subject which possibly may need a better clearing. For 'tis notorious that the chief Opposers of Atheism write upon contrary Principles to one another, so as in a manner to confute themselves. Some of 'em hold zealously for Virtue, and are *Realists* in the Point. Others, one may say, are only *nominal Moralists*, by making Virtue nothing in it-self, a Creature of Will only, or a mere Name of Fashion. 'Tis the same in natural Philosophy: Some take one Hypothesis, and some another. I shou'd be glad to discover once the true Foundation; and distinguish those who effectually refute their other Antagonists as well as the *Atheists*, and rightly assert the joint-Cause of Virtue and Religion.

HERE, PALEMON, I had my Wish.  
For by degrees I ingag'd THEOCLES to  
R 2 discover

Part 2. discover himself fully upon these Subjects; which serv'd as a Prelude to those we were to ingage in, the next Morning; for the approach of which, I so impatiently long'd. If his Speculations prov'd of a *rational kind*, this previous Discourse (I knew) wou'd help me to comprehend 'em; if only *pleasing Fancys*, this wou'd help me however, to please my-self the better with 'em.

HERE then began his Criticism of Authors; which grew by degrees into a continu'd Discourse. So that had this been at a University, THEOLES might very well have pass'd for some grave Divinity-Professor, or Teacher of *Ethicks*, reading an Afternoon Lecture to his Pupils.

### S E C T. III.

*Divinity.* IT wou'd be undoubtedly, said he, a happy Cause which cou'd have the benefit of such Managers as shou'd never give their Adversarys any handle of advantage against it. I cou'd wish that in the Cause of RELIGION we had reason to boast as much. But since 'tis not impossible to write ill even in the best of Causes, I am inclin'd to think this great one of *Religion* may have run at least an equal hazard with any other; since they who write in defence of it, are apt generally to use so much

*Divines.*

much the less Caution, as they are more Sect. 3.  
 exempt from the fear of Censure or Criticism in their own Person. Their Adversary is well secur'd and silenc'd to their hand. They may safely provoke him to a Field where he cannot appear openly, or as a profess'd Antagonist. His Weapons are private, and can often reach the Cause without offence to its *Maintainers*; whilst no direct Attack robs them of their imaginary Victory. They conquer *for themselves*, and expect to be approv'd still for their *Zeal*, however the Cause it-self may have suffer'd in their hands.——

PERHAPS then, said I, (interrupting him) it may be true enough, what was said once by a Person who seem'd zealous for Religion, “ That none *writ well* against the Atheists beside the Clerk who drew *Atheist*, “ the Warrant for their Execution.”

If this were the *true Writing*, reply'd he, there wou'd be an end of all Dispute or Reasoning in the Case. For where Force is necessary, Reason has nothing to do. But on the other hand, if Reason be needful, Force in the mean while must be laid aside: For there is no Enforcement of Reason, but by Reason. And therefore if *Atheists* are to be reason'd with, at all; they are to be reason'd with, like other


Part 2. Men; since there's no other way in nature  
to convince 'em.

*Atheist.*

THIS I own, said I, seems rational and just: But I'm afraid that most of the devout People will be found ready to abandon the *patient*, for the more *concise* Method. And tho Force without Reason may be thought somewhat hard, yet your other way of Reason without Force, I am apt to think, wou'd meet with fewer Admirers.

BUT perhaps, reply'd THEOCLES, 'tis a mere Sound which troubles us. The Word or Name of *Atheist* may possibly occasion some Disturbance, by being made to describe two Characters so very different as His who *absolutely denies*, and His who *only doubts*. Now he who *doubts*, may possibly lament his own Unhappiness, and wish to be convinc'd. He who *denies*, is daringly presumptuous, and sets up an Opinion against the Interest of Mankind, and Being of Society. 'Tis easily seen that *one* of these Persons may bear a due respect to the Magistrate and Laws, tho not *the other*; who being obnoxious to them, is therefore punishable. But how the former is punishable *by Man*, will be hard to say; unless the Magistrate had dominion over Minds, as well as over Actions and Behaviour; and had power to  
exercise

*Punishment.*

exercise an Inquisition within the inmost Sect. 3.  
Bosoms and secret Thoughts of Men. 

I APPREHEND you, said I. And by your account; as there are *two* sorts of People who are call'd Atheists, so there are *two* ways of writing against them, which may be fitly us'd apart, but not so well jointly. You wou'd set aside mere Menaces, and separate the *Philosopher's* Work from the *Magistrate's*; taking it for granted, that the more discreet and sober part of Unbelievers, who come not under the dispatching Pen, of the Magistrate, can be affected only by the more deliberate and gentle one of Philosophy. Now the Language of the Magistrate, I must confess, has little in common with that of Philosophy. Nothing can be more unbecoming the magisterial Authority than a philosophical Style: and nothing can be more unphilosophical than a magisterial one. A Mixture of these must needs spoil both. And therefore, in the Cause before us, "If any one besides the Magistrate can be said to *write well*; 'tis HE (according to your account) who writes as becomes Philosophy, with Freedom of Debate, and Fairness towards his Adversary."

ALLOW it, reply'd he. For what can be more equitable? Nothing. But

Part 2. will *the World* be of the same Opinion? And may this Method of writing be justly practis'd in it? Undoubtedly it may.

philosophy.

And for a Proof, we have many Instances in Antiquity to produce. The Freedom taken in this philosophical way was never esteem'd injurious to Religion; or prejudicial to the Vulgar: since we find it to have been a Practice both in Writing and Conversation among the great Men of a virtuous and religious People; and that even those Magistrates who officiated at the Altars, and were the Guardians of the publick Worship, were Sharers in these free Debates.

Jealousy  
of Authors.

FORGIVE me, PHEOCLES, (said I) if I presume to say, that still this reaches not the Case before us. We are to consider *Christian* Times, such as are now present. You know the common Fate of those who dare to appear *fair Authors*. What was that pious and learned Man's Case, who wrote *the Intellectual System of the Universe*? I confess it was pleasant enough to consider, that tho' the whole World were no less satisfy'd with his Capacity and Learning, than with his Sincerity in the Cause of *Deity*; yet was he accus'd of giving the upper hand to the Atheists, for having only stated their Reasons, and those of their Adversarys, fairly together. And among other Writings of this kind, you may remember how a certain

tain *Fair* INQUIRY (as you call'd it) *Sect. 3.*  
 was receiv'd, and what offence was taken  
 at it.

I AM sorry, said THEOCLES, it prov'd  
 so. But now indeed you have found a  
 way which may, perhaps, force me to  
 discourse at large with you on this head;  
 by entering the Lists in defence of a  
 Friend unjustly censur'd for this philoso-  
 phical Liberty.

I CONFESS'D TO THEOCLES and the  
 Company, that this had really been my  
 Aim: And that for this reason alone I  
 made my-self the Accuser of this Author;  
 "Whom I here actually charg'd, as I did  
 "all those other *moderate calm* Writers,  
 "with no less than Profaneness, for rea-  
 "soning so unconcernedly and patiently,  
 "without the least shew of Zeal or Pas-  
 "sion, upon the Subject of a Deity, and  
 "a future State."

AND I, on the other side, reply'd THE-  
 OCLES, am rather for this patient way of  
 Reasoning; and will endeavour to clear my  
 Friend of this Imputation, if you can have  
 patience enough to hear me out, in an Af-  
 fair of such a compass.

WE all answer'd for our-selves, and he  
 began thus.

OF

OF THE many Writers engag'd in the Defence of Religion, it seems to me that the greatest part are employ'd, either in supporting the Truth of the Christian Faith in general, or in refuting such particular Doctrines as are esteem'd Innovations in the Christian Church. There are not, 'tis thought, many Persons in the World who are loose in the very Grounds and Principles of all Religion: And to such as these we find, indeed, there are not many Writers who purposely apply themselves. They may think it a mean Labour, and scarce becoming them, to argue sedately with such as are almost universally treated with Detestation and Horror. But as we are requir'd by our Religion to have Charity for all Men, so we cannot surely avoid having a real Concern for those whom we apprehend to be under the worst of Errors, and whom we find by Experience to be with the greatest difficulty reclaim'd. Neither ought they perhaps in prudence to be treated with so little regard, whose Number, however small, is thought to be rather increasing; and this too among the People of no despicable Rank. So that it may well deserve some Consideration, " Whether in our Age and  
 " Country the same Remedys may serve,  
 " which have hitherto been try'd; or  
 " whether



" whether some other may not be prefer'd, Sect. 3.  
 " as being futable to Times of less Strict-  
 " nefs in Matters of Religion, and Places  
 " less subject to Authority."

THIS might be enough to put an Au-  
 thor upon thinking of such a way of rea-  
 soning with these deluded Persons, as in  
 his Opinion might be more effectual for  
 their Benefit, than the repeated *Exclama-*  
*tions* and *Invectives* with which most of  
 the Arguments us'd against them are com-  
 monly accompany'd. Nor was it so ab-  
 surd to imagine that a quite different Me-  
 thod might be attempted; by which a  
 Writer might offer Reason to these Men  
 with so much more Favour and Advantage,  
 as he appear'd un-prepossess'd, and willing  
 to examine every thing with the greatest  
 Unconcern and Indifference. For to such  
 Persons as these, 'tis to be fear'd, 'twill  
 always appear, " That what was never  
 " *question'd*, was never *prov'd*: and That  
 " whatever Subject had not, at some time  
 " or other, been examin'd with perfect In-  
 " difference, was never *rightly examin'd*,  
 " nor cou'd *rightly be believ'd*." And in  
 a Treatise of this kind, offer'd as an *Essay*  
 or *Inquiry* only, they wou'd be far from  
 finding that Impartiality and Indifference  
 which is requisite: if instead of a Readiness  
 to comply with whatever Consequen-  
 ces such an Examination as this, and the  
 Course

Part 2. Course of Reasoning brought forth, the  
 ~~~~~ Author shou'd shew a previous Inclination  
Authors. to the Consequences only on one side, and
 an Abhorrence of any Conclusion on the
 other.

OTHERS therefore, in different Circumstances, may perhaps have found it necessary, and becoming their *Character*, to shew all manner of Detestation both of the Persons and Principles of these Men. Our Author, on the contrary, whose *Character* exceeds not that of a *Lay-man*, endeavours to shew Civility and Favour, by keeping the fairest Measures he possibly can with the Men of this sort; allowing 'em all he is able, and arguing with a perfect Indifference, even on the Subject of a *Deity*. He offers to conclude nothing positive himself, but leaves it to others to draw Conclusions from his Principles: having this one chief Aim and Intention; "How, in the first place, to reconcile
 " these Persons to the *Principles of Vir-*
 " *tue*; That, by this means, a Way might
 " be laid open to *Religion*; by removing
 " those greatest, if not only Obstacles to
 " it, which arise from the Vices and Pas-
 " sions of Men."

Funda-
 mental
 Principles.

"Tis upon this account he endeavours chiefly to establish *Virtue* on Principles, by which he is able to argue with those
 who

who are not as yet induc'd to own a GOD, Sect. 3. or *Future State*. If he cannot do thus much, he reckons he does nothing. For how can *Supreme Goodness* be intelligible to those who know not what *Goodness itself* is? Or how can *Virtue* be understood to deserve Reward, when as yet its Merit and Excellence is unknown? We begin surely at the wrong end, when we would prove MERIT by Favour, and ORDER by a Deity.—This our Friend seeks to redress. For being, in respect of VIRTUE, what you lately call'd a *Realist*; he endeavours to shew, “ That it is really some-
 “ thing in it-self, and in the nature of
 “ Things: not arbitrary or *fictitious* (if
 “ I may so speak) not constituted from
 “ without, or dependent on *Custom, Fan-*
 “ *cy, or Will*; not even on the *Supreme*
 “ *Will* it-self, which can no-way govern
 “ it: but being *necessarily good*, is go-
 “ vern'd by it, and ever uniform with it.” And notwithstanding he has thus made VIRTUE his chief Subject, and in some measure independent on Religion, yet I fancy he may possibly appear at last as high a *Divine* as he is a *Moralist*.

I wou'd not willingly advance it as ^{Theists,} a Rule, “ That those who make only a ^{Nominal,} ^{Real,} Name of VIRTUE, make no more of
 “ DEITY, and cannot without Affecta-
 “ tion defend the Principles of Religion.”


But

Part 2. But this I will venture to assert; "That
 ~~~~~  
 Theists, " whoever sincerely defends VIRTUE,  
 Nominal, " and is a *Realist* in MORALITY, must  
 Real. " of necessity, in a manner, by the same  
 " Scheme of Reasoning, prove as very a  
 " *Realist* in DIVINITY."

ALL *Affectation*, but chiefly in Philosophy, I must own, I think unpardonable. And you, PHILOCLES, who can give no quarter to ill Reasoning, nor endure any unsound or inconsistent Hypothesis; you will be so ingenuous, I dare say, as to reject our modern DEISM, and challenge those who assume a Name to which their *Philosophy* can never in the least intitle 'em.

COMMEND me to honest EPICURUS, who raises his DEITYS aloft in the imaginary Spaces; and setting 'em apart out of the Universe and Nature of Things, makes nothing of 'em beyond a *Word*. This is ingenuous, and plain dealing: For this every one who philosophizes may easily understand.

THE same Ingenuity belongs to those Philosophers whom you, PHILOCLES, seem inclin'd to favour. When a SCEP-TICK questions, " Whether a *real Theology* can be rais'd out of *Philosophy alone*, " without the help of *Revelation*;" he does no more than pay a handsom Compliment

pliment to Authority and the receiv'd Religion. He can impose on no-one who reasons deeply: since whoever does so, will easily conceive, that at this rate Theology must have no Foundation at all. For Revelation it-self, we know, is founded on the Acknowledgment of a divine Existence: And 'tis the Province of Philosophy alone to *prove* what Revelation only *supposes*. Sect. 3. 

I LOOK on it, therefore, as a most unfair way, for those who wou'd be *Builders*, and undertake this *proving* part, to lay such a Foundation as is insufficient to bear the Structure. Supplanting and Undermining may, in other Cases, be *fair War*: But in philosophical Disputes, 'tis not allowable to work under-ground, or as in Sieges *by the Sap*. Nothing can be more unbecoming than to talk magisterially and in venerable Terms of "A *supreme* NATURE, an *infinite Being*, and A DEITY;" when all the while a *Providence* is never meant, nor any thing like *Order* or *the Government of a Mind* admitted. For when *these* are understood, and *real Divinity* acknowledg'd; the Notion is not dry, and barren; but such Consequences are necessarily drawn from it, as must set us in Action, and find Employment for our strongest Affections. All the *Dutys* of RELIGION evidently follow hence;  
and

Part 2. and no exception remains against any of those great Maxims which *Revelation* has establish'd.

Theists,  
Nominal,  
Real.

Now whether our Friend be unfeign'dly and sincerely of this latter sort of *real Theologists*, you will learn best from the Consequences of his *Hypothesis*. You will observe, whether instead of ending in *mere Speculation*, it leads to *Practice*: And you will then surely be satisfy'd, when you see such a Structure rais'd, as with the Generality of the World must pass at least for *high Religion*, and with some, in all likelihood, for no less than *ENTHUSIASM*.

Divine  
Love.

FOR I appeal to you, *PHILOGUES*, whether there be any thing in *Divinity* which you think has more the Air of *Enthusiasm* than that Notion of *Divine Love*, such as separates from every thing worldly, sensual, or meanly-interested? A *Love* which is *simple, pure, and unmix'd*; which has no other Object than merely *the Excellency of that Being it-self*, nor admits of any other Thought of Happiness, than in *its single Fruition*. Now I dare presume you will take it as a substantial proof of my Friend's being far enough from Irreligion, if it be shewn that he has espous'd this *Notion*, and thinks of making out this *high Point of Divinity*, from Arguments familiar even to those who oppose *Religion*.

ACCOR-

ACCORDING, therefore, to his Hypothesis, he wou'd in the first place, by way of prevention, declare to you, That tho' the *disinterested Love of God* were the most excellent Principle; yet he knew very well, that by the indiscreet Zeal of some devout well-meaning People it had been stretch'd too far, perhaps even to Extravagance and Enthusiasm; as formerly among the *Mysticks* of the antient Church, *Mysticks* whom these of latter days have follow'd. On the other hand, that there were those who in opposition to this devout mystick way, and as profess'd Enemy's to what they call *Enthusiasm*, had so far exploded every thing of this ecstasick kind, as in a manner to have given up Devotion; and in reality had left so little of Zeal, Affection, or Warmth, in what they call their *Rational Religion*, as to make them much suspected of their Sincerity in *any*. For tho' it be natural enough (he wou'd tell you) for a mere political Writer to ground his great Argument for Religion on the necessity of such a Belief as that of a *future Reward and Punishment*; yet, if you will take his Opinion, 'tis a very ill Token of Sincerity in Religion, and in the Christian Religion more especially, to reduce it to such a Philosophy as will allow no room to that other Principle of *Love*; but treats all of that kind as *Enthusiasm*,

Part 2. for so much as aiming at what is call'd *Disinterestedness*, or teaching the *Love of God or Virtue for GOD or VIRTUE's sake*.

RELIGION,  
liberal,  
illiberal.

HERE, then, we have two sorts of People (according to my Friend's account) who in these opposite Extremes expose *Religion* to the Insults of its Adversarys. For as, on one hand, 'twill be found difficult to defend the Notion of that high-raisd Love, espous'd with so much warmth by those devout *Mysticks*; so, on the other hand, 'twill be found as hard a Task, upon the Principles of these cooler Men, to guard Religion from the Imputation of Mercenariness, and a slavish Spirit. For how shall one deny, that to serve God by Compulsion, or for Interest merely, is *servile* and *mercenary*? Is it not evident, that the only *true* and *liberal* Service paid either to that supreme Being, or to any other Superior, is *that*, "which proceeds from an *Esteem* or *Love* of the Person serv'd, a *Sense* of Duty or Gratitude, and a Love of the dutiful and grateful Part, as *good* and *amiable*, in *it-self*?" And where is the Injury to *Religion*, from such a Concession as this? Or what Detraction is it from the Belief of an After-reward or Punishment, to own "That the Service caus'd by it, is not equal to that which is *voluntary* and *with Inclination*, but is rather *dissingenuous*"



“nuous and of the slavish kind?” Is it Sect. 3.  
 not still for the Good of Mankind and  
 of the World, that Obedience to the Rule  
 of Right shou’d some way or other be  
 paid; if not *in the better way*, yet at least  
*in this imperfect one?* And is it not to be  
 shewn, “That altho this Service of Fear  
 “be allow’d ever so low or base: yet RE-  
 “LIGION still being a *Discipline*, and  
 “*Progress* of the Soul towards Perfection,  
 “the Motive of Reward and Punishment *Rewards*  
 “is primary and of the highest moment *and Pu-*  
 “with us; till being capable of more sub- *nishments,*  
 “lime Instruction, we are led from this  
 “*servile* State, to the generous Service of  
 “*Affection* and *Love?*”

To this it is that in our Friend’s Opi-  
 nion we ought all of us to aspire, so as to  
 endeavour “That the *Excellence of the*  
 “*Object*, not the *Reward* or *Punishment*,  
 “shou’d be our Motive: But that where  
 “thro the Corruption of our Nature, the  
 “*former* of these Motives is found insuffi-  
 “cient to excite to Virtue, there the *latter* *Supplemen-*  
 “shou’d be brought in aid, and on no ac- *tal Mo-*  
 “count be undervalu’d or neglected.” *tives.*

Now this being once establish’d, how  
 can RELIGION be any longer subject  
 to the Imputation of *Mercenariness*? But  
 thus we know Religion is often charg’d.  
 “*Godliness*, say they, *is great Gain*: nor

Part 2. "is God devoutly serv'd for nought?"

Is this therefore a Reproach? Is it confess'd there may be *a better Service, a more generous Love*? — Enough, there needs no more. On this Foundation our Friend presumes it easy to defend RELIGION, and even that *devoutest Part*, which is esteem'd so great a Paradox of Faith. For if there be in Nature such a Service as that of Affection and Love, there remains then only to consider of *the Object*, whether there be really that *supreme-One* we suppose. For if there be *divine Excellence* in Things; if there be in Nature a *supreme Mind* or DEITY; we have then an Object consummate, and comprehensive of all which is *good or excellent*. And this Object, of all others, must of necessity be the most amiable, the most engaging, and of highest Satisfaction and Enjoyment. Now that there is such a principal Object as this in the World, the World alone (if I may say so) by its wise and perfect Order must evince. This Order, if indeed perfect, excludes all *real ILL*. And that it really does so, is what our Author so earnestly maintains, by solving the best he can those untoward *Phænomena* and ill Signs, taken from the Course of Providence, in the seemingly unequal Lot of *Virtue* in this World.

*Object of  
Love.*

"Tis true; tho the Appearances hold ever so strongly against *Virtue*, and in favour

your of *Vice*, the Objection which arises Sect. 3.  
 hence against a DEITY may be easily remov'd, and all set right again on the sup-  
 posal of a *future State*. This to a Chri- <sup>Future</sup>  
 stian, or one already convinc'd of so great <sup>State.</sup>  
 a Point, is sufficient to clear every dark  
 Cloud of Providence. For he needs not  
 be over-and-above solicitous as to the Fate  
 of VIRTUE in *this World*, who is secure  
 of *Hereafter*. But the case is otherwise as  
 to the People we are here to encounter.  
 They are at a loss for Providence, and  
 seek to find it in the World. The Aggra-  
 vation of the appearing Disorders in world-  
 ly Affairs, and the blackest Representation  
 of Society and Human Nature, will hard-  
 ly help 'em to this View. 'Twill be diffi-  
 cult for 'em to read Providence in such  
 Characters. From so uncomely a Face of  
 things *below*, they will presume to think  
 unfavourably of all *above*. By the *Effects*  
 they see, they will be inclin'd to judg the  
*Cause*, and by the Fate of *Virtue* to deter-  
 mine of a *Providence*. But being once  
 convinc'd of Order and a Providence as <sup>Previous</sup>  
 to things *present*, they may soon, perhaps, <sup>Proof.</sup>  
 be satisfy'd even of a *future State*. For  
 if Virtue be to it-self no small Reward,  
 and Vice, in a great measure its own Pu-  
 nishment; we have a solid ground to go  
 upon. The plain Foundations of a distri-  
 butive Justice, and due Order in this World,  
 may lead us to conceive a further Building.

Part 2. We apprehend a larger Scheme, and easily resolve our-selves why Things were not compleated in this State; but their Accomplishment reserv'd rather to some further period. For had the good and virtuous of Mankind been wholly prosperous in this Life; had Goodness never met with Opposition, nor Merit ever lain under a Cloud; where had been the Trial, Victory, or Crown of *Virtue*? Where had the Virtues had their Theater, or whence their Names? Where had been *Temperance* or *Self-denial*? Where *Patience*, *Meekness*, *Magnanimity*? Whence have these their being? What *Merit*, except from Hardship? What *Virtue* without a Conflict, and the Encounter of such Enemys as arise both within, and from abroad?

*A Providence.*  
ORDER.

BUT as many as are the Difficultys which *Virtue* has to encounter in this World, her Force is yet superior. Expos'd as she is here, she is not however abandon'd or left miserable. She has enough to raise her above Pity, tho not above our Wishes: and as happy as we see her here, we have room for further Hopes in her behalf. Her present Portion is sufficient to shew Providence already engag'd on her side. And since there is such Provision for her *here*, such Happiness and such Advantages even in this Life; how probable must it appear, that this providential

dential Care is extended yet further to a *Sect. 3.*  
*succeeding Life*, and perfected *hereafter*? ~~~~~

THIS is what, in our Friend's opinion, may be said in behalf of a future State, to those who question Revelation. 'Tis this must render Revelation probable, and secure that first step to it, the Belief of a Deity and Providence. A Providence must be prov'd from what we see of Order in things present. We must contend for Order; and in this part chiefly, where Virtue is concern'd. All must not be refer'd to a *Hereafter*. For a disorder'd State, in which all present Care of Things is given up, Vice uncontroul'd, and Virtue neglected, represents a very *Chaos*, and reduces us to the belov'd Atoms, Chance, and Confusion of the Atheists. Recapitulation.

WHAT therefore can be worse done in the Cause of a Deity, than to magnify Disorder, and exaggerate (as some zealous People do) the Misfortunes of Virtue, so far as to render it an unhappy Choice with respect to this World? They err widely, who propose to turn Men to the Thoughts of a *better* World, by making 'em think so ill of *this*. For to declaim in this manner against *Virtue* to those of a looser Faith, will make 'em the less believe a Deity, but not the more a *future State*. Future State.

Part 2. that any Man, by having the most elevated Opinion of Virtue, and of the Happiness it creates, was ever the less inclin'd to the Belief of a future State. On the contrary, it will ever be found, that as they who are Favourers of Vice are always the least willing to hear of a future Existence; so they who are in love with Virtue, are the readiest to embrace that Opinion which renders it so illustrious, and makes its Cause triumphant.

*Favourers  
of the Op-  
inion.*

*Antients.*

THUS it was, that among the Antients the great Motive which inclin'd so many of the wisest to the Belief of this Doctrine unreveal'd to 'em, was purely *the Love of Virtue* in the Persons of those great Men, the *Founders* and *Preservers* of Societys, the *Legislators*, *Patriots*, *Deliverers*, *Heroes*, whose Virtues they were desirous shou'd live and be immortaliz'd. Nor is there at this day any thing capable of making this Belief more engaging among the Good and *Friendship*. Virtuous than *the Love of Friendship*, which creates in 'em a Desire not to be wholly separated by Death, but that they may enjoy the same bless'd Society hereafter. How is it possible, then, that an *Author* shou'd, for exalting *Virtue* merely, be deem'd an Enemy to a *future State*? How can our Friend be judg'd false to *Religion*, for defending a Principle on which the very Notion of *God* and *Goodness* depends?

pend? For this he says only, and this is Sect. 3.  
 the Sum of all: "That by building a fu-  
 "ture State on the Ruins of *Virtue*, RE-  
 "LIGION in general, and the Cause of  
 "a *Deity* is betray'd; and by making Re-  
 "wards and Punishments the principal  
 "Motives to Duty, the Christian Religion  
 "in particular is overthrown, and its grea-  
 "test Principle, that of *Love*, rejected  
 "and expos'd." Conclu-  
sion.

UPON the whole then, we may justly  
 as well as charitably conclude, that it is  
 truly *our Author's* Design, in applying him-  
 self with so much Fairness to the Men of  
 looser Principles, to lead 'em into such an  
 Apprehension of the Constitution of Man-  
 kind and of human Affairs, as might form  
 in 'em a Notion of *Order in Things*, and  
 draw hence an Acknowledgment of, that  
 Wisdom, Goodness, and Beauty, which is  
 supreme; that being thus far become Pro-  
 felytes, they might be prepar'd for that  
*divine Love* which our Religion wou'd  
 teach 'em, when once they shou'd embrace  
 its Precepts, and form themselves to its sa-  
 cred Character.

THUS, continu'd he, I have made  
 my Friend's Apology; which may have  
 shewn him to you perhaps a good *Mora-*  
*list*; and, I hope, no Enemy to Religion.  
 But

Part 2. But if you find still that *the Divine* has not appear'd so much in his Character as *Conclusion.* I promis'd, I can never think of satisfying you in any ordinary way of Conversation. Shou'd I offer to go further, I might be engag'd deeply in spiritual Affairs, and be forc'd to make some new Model of a *Sermon* upon his System of Divinity. However, I am in hopes, now that in good earnest Matters are come well-nigh to *Preaching*, you will acquit me for what I have already perform'd.

## S E C T. IV.

**J**UST as he had made an end of speaking, came in some Visitants, who took us up the remaining part of the Afternoon in other Discourses. But these being over, and our Strangers gone (all except *the old Gentleman*, and *his Friend*, who had din'd with us) we began a-new with THEOCLES, by laying claim to his Sermon, and intreating him, again and again, to let us hear him, at large, in his *theological* way.

THIS he complain'd was persecuting him: As you have seen Company, said he, often persecute a reputed Singer, not out of any fancy for the Musick, but to satisfy a malicious sort of Curiosity, which ends commonly in Censure and Dislike.

How-



HOWEVER it might be, we told him we were resolv'd to persist. And I assur'd our Companions, that if they wou'd second me heartily in the manner I intended to press him; we shou'd easily get the better.

IN revenge then, said he, I will comply on this condition; That since I am to sustain the part of *the Divine* and *Preacher*, it shall be at PHILOCLES's cost; who shall bear the Part of *the Infidel*, and stand for the Person *preach'd to*.

TRULY, said the old Gentleman, the Part you have propos'd for him is so natural and suitable, that, I doubt not, he will be able to act it without the least Pain. I cou'd wish rather, that you had spar'd your-self the Trouble of putting him thus in mind of his proper *Character*. He wou'd have been apt enough of his own accord to interrupt your Discourse by his Perpetual Cavils. Therefore since we have now had Entertainment enough by way of *Dialogue*, I desire the *Law* of SERMON may be strictly observ'd; and "That there be no *answering* to whatever is *argu'd* or *advanc'd*."

I CONSENTED to all the Terms, and told THEOCLES I wou'd stand his Mark willingly;

Part 2. willingly : And besides, if I really were that *Infidel* he was to suppose me, I shou'd count it no Unhappiness ; since I was sure of being so thorowly convinc'd by him, if he wou'd vouchsafe to undertake me.

THEOCLES then propos'd we shou'd walk out ; the *Evening* being fine, and the free Air futing better (as he thought) with such Discourses, than a Chamber.

ACCORDINGLY we took our Evening-Walk in the Fields, from whence the laborious Hinds were now retiring. We fell naturally into the Praises of a *Country-Life* ; and discours'd a-while of *Husbandry*, and the Nature of the *Soil*. Our Friends began to admire some of the *Plants* which grew here to great perfection. And it being my fortune (as having acquir'd a little Insight into the nature of *Simple*s) to say something they mightily approv'd, upon this Subject, THEOCLES immediately turning about to me ; “ O my ingenious Friend ! ” said he, “ whose Reason, in other respects, must be allow'd so clear and happy ; How is it possible that with such Insight, and accurate Judgment in the *Particulars* of natural Beings and Operations, you shou'd no better judg' of the Structure of Things in general, and of the Order and Frame  
“ of

“ of NATURE? Who better than your- Sect. 4.  
 “ self can shew the Structure of each  
 “ Plant and Animal-Body, declare the Of-  
 “ fice of every *Part* and *Organ*, and tell *Organi-*  
 “ the Uses, Ends, and Advantages to *zation.*  
 “ which they serve? How therefore,  
 “ shou’d you prove so ill a *Naturalist* in  
 “ *this* WHOLE, and understand so little  
 “ the Anatomy of *the World* and *Nature*,  
 “ as not to discern the same Relation of  
 “ Parts, the same Consistency and Unifor-  
 “ mity in *the Universe*!

“ SOME Men perhaps there are of so  
 “ confus’d a Thought, and so irregularly  
 “ form’d *within themselves*, that ’tis no  
 “ more than natural for them to find fault,  
 “ and imagine a thousand Inconsistencies  
 “ and Defects in this *wider Constitution*.  
 “ ’Twas not, we may presume, the abso-  
 “ lute Aim or Interest of the Universal Na-  
 “ ture, to render every private-one infal-  
 “ lible, and without defect. ’Twas not  
 “ its Intention to leave us without some  
 “ Pattern of Imperfection; such as we  
 “ perceive in Minds, like these, perplex’d  
 “ with froward Thought. But you, my  
 “ Friend, are Master of a nobler Mind.  
 “ You are conscious of better Order *with-*  
 “ *in*, and can see Workmanship and Ex-  
 “ actness in your-self, and other *innumera-*  
 “ *ble Parts* of the Creation. Can you an-  
 “ swer it to your-self, allowing thus much,  
 “ not

Part 2. " not to allow all? Can you induce your-  
 self ever to believe or think, that where  
 there are Parts so variously united, and  
 conspiring fitly within themselves, *the*  
 WHOLE " *Whole* it self shou'd have neither Union  
 and Parts. " nor Coherence; and where inferior and  
 private Natures are often found so per-  
 fect, *the Universal one* shou'd want Per-  
 fection, and be esteem'd like whatsoever  
 can be thought of, most monstrous; rude,  
 and imperfect?

" STRANGE! That there shou'd be in  
 " *Nature* the Idea of an Order and Per-  
 fection; which NATURE her self wants!  
 " That Beings which arise from *Nature*  
 " shou'd be so perfect, as to discover Im-  
 perfection in her Constitution; and be  
 " wise enough to correct that Wisdom by  
 " which they were made!

" NOTHING surely is more strongly  
 " imprinted on our Minds, or more close-  
 ly interwoven with our Souls, than the  
 Proportion. " Idea or Sense of *Order* and *Proportion*.  
 " Hence all the Force of *Numbers*, and  
 " those powerful *Arts* founded on their  
 " Management and Use. What a differ-  
 " rence there is between *Harmony* and  
 " *Discord!* *Cadency* and *Convulsion!*  
 " What a difference between compos'd and  
 " orderly Motion, and that which is ungo-  
 " vern'd and accidental! between the re-  
 " gular

“ gular and uniform Pile of some noble Sect. 4.  
 “ Architect, and a Heap of Sand or Stones! ~~~~~  
 “ between an organiz’d Body, and a Mist  
 “ or Cloud driven by the Wind!

“ Now as this Difference is immediately perceiv’d by a plain internal Sensation, so there is withal in Reason this account of it; That whatever Things have *Order*, the same have *Unity of Union*, *Design*, and concur in one, are Parts constituent of one WHOLE, or are, in themselves, *intire Systems*. Such is a *Tree*, with all its Branches; an *Animal*, with all its Members; an *Edifice*, with all its exterior and interior Ornaments. What else is even a *Tune* or *Symphony*; or any excellent Piece of Musick, than a certain *System* of proportion’d Sounds?

“ Now in this which we call the *System*,  
 “ UNIVERSE, whatever the Perfection may be of any *particular Systems*; or whatever *single Parts* may have Proportion, Unity, or Form within themselves; yet if they are not united all in general, in \* ONE *System*, but are, in  
 “ respect

---

\* *vid.* LOCKE of human Understanding, Book IV. Chap. 6. §. II.

*Ac mihi quidem Veteres illi majus quiddam animo complexi, multo plus etiam vidisse videntur, quam quantum nostrorum ingeniorum acies intueri potest: qui omnia hæc, quæ supra et subter, unum esse, et una vi, atque una consensione*

Part 2. " respect of one another, as the driven  
 ~~~~~ " Sands; or Clouds; or breaking Waves;  
 System. " then there being no Coherence in *the*
 " *Whole*, there can be infer'd no Order,
 " no Proportion, and consequently no
 " Project or *Design*. But if none of these
 " Parts are independent, but all apparently
 " united, then is the *WHOLE a System*
 " compleat, according to one *simple, con-*
 " *sistent, and uniform DESIGN*."

Animal-
 System.

" *HERE* then is our main Subject, in-
 " fisted on: That neither *Man*, nor any
 " other Animal, tho ever so compleat a
 " *System* of Parts, as to all *within*, can be
 " allow'd in the same manner compleat, as
 " to all *without*; but must be consider'd as
 " having a further relation abroad to *the*
 " *System of his Kind*. So even this System
 " of his Kind to *the Animal-System*; this to
 " the World (our *Earth*;) and this again
 " to *the bigger World*, and to *the Universe*."

sione nature constricta esse dixerunt. Nullum est enim genus rerum, quod aut avulsum à ceteris per seipsum constare, aut quo cetera si careant, vim suam, atque aeternitatem conservare possint. Cicero de Oratore, lib. 3.

Omne hoc, quod vides, quo divina atque humana conclusa sunt, unum est: membra sumus corporis magni. Seneca, Epist. 95.

*Societas nostra Lapidum fornicationi simillima est: qua ca-
 fura, nisi invicem obstarent, hoc ipso sustinetur. Ibidem.*

*Esine Dei Sedes, nisi Terra, & Pontus, & Æther,
 Et Cælum, & Virtus? Superos quid quarimus ultra?
 Jupiter est quodcunque vides, quocunque moveris.*

Lucan. lib. 9.

" ALL

" ALL things in this World are *united*.
 " For as the *Branch* is united with the
 " *Tree*, so is the Tree as immediately with
 " the *Earth, Air, and Water*, which feed
 " it. As much as the fertile *Mould* is
 " fitted to the Tree, as much as the strong
 " and upright Trunk of the *Oak* or *Elm*
 " is fitted to the twining Branches of the
 " *Vine* or *Ivy*; so much are the very
 " *Leaves, the Seeds, and Fruits* of these
 " Trees fitted to the various *Animals*:
 " These again to one another, and to the
 " *Elements* where they live, and to which
 " they are, as Appendices, in a manner fit-
 " ted and join'd; as either by *Wings* for
 " the Air, *Fins* for the Water, *Feet* for
 " the Earth, and by other correspondent
 " inward Parts of a more curious Frame
 " and Texture. Thus in contemplating all
 " on Earth, we must of necessity view *All*
 " *in One*, as holding to one common Stock.
 " Thus too in the System of the bigger
 " World. See there the mutual Depen-
 " dency of Things! the Relation of one
 " to another; of the Sun to this inhabited
 " Earth, and of the Earth and other Pla-
 " nets to the Sun! the Order, Union, and
 " Coherence of *the Whole*! And know
 " (my ingenious Friend) That by this Sur-
 " vey you will be oblig'd to own the
 " UNIVERSAL SYSTEM, and coherent *Universal*
 " Scheme of Things, to be establish'd on *System*.
 " Vol. 2. T " abun-


Part 2. “ abundant Proof, capable of convincing
 “ any fair and just Contemplator of the
 “ Works of Nature. For scarce wou’d
 “ any-one, till he had well survey’d this
 “ universal Scene, believe a *Union* thus
 “ evidently demonstrable, by such nu-
 “ merous and powerful Instances of mutual
 “ Correspondency and Relation, from the
 “ minutest Ranks and Orders of Beings to
 “ the remotest Spheres.

*Appea-
 rance of Ill
 necessary.*

“ Now, in this mighty UNION, if
 “ there be such Relations of Parts one to
 “ another as are not easily discover’d; if
 “ on this account the End and Use of
 “ Things does not every-where appear,
 “ there is no wonder; since ’tis no more
 “ indeed than what must happen of ne-
 “ cessity: Nor cou’d supreme Wisdom
 “ have otherwise order’d it. For in an
 “ Infinity of Things thus relative, a Mind
 “ which sees not *infinitely*, can see nothing
 “ *fully*: And since each Particular has re-
 “ lation to all in general, it can know no
 “ perfect or true Relation of any Thing,
 “ in a World not perfectly and fully
 “ known.

Solution.

“ THE same may be consider’d in any
 “ dissected Animal, Plant, or Flower;
 “ where he who is no Anatomist, nor
 “ vers’d in natural History, sees that the
 “ many *Parts* have a relation to the *Whole*;
 “ for

“ for thus much even a slight View of Sect. 4.
 “ fords: But he who like you, my Friend, 
 “ is curious in the Works of Nature, and
 “ has been let into a Knowledge of the
 “ animal and vegetable Worlds, he a-
 “ lone can readily declare the just Rela-
 “ tion of all these Parts to one another;
 “ and the several Uses to which they
 “ serve.

“ But if you wou'd willingly enter fur- *Example.*
 “ ther into this Thought, and consider how
 “ much we ought not only to be satisf-
 “ fy'd with this our View of Things, but
 “ even to admire its Clearness; imagine
 “ only some Person intirely a Stranger to
 “ Navigation, and ignorant of the Nature
 “ of the Sea or Waters, how great his
 “ Astonishment wou'd be, when finding
 “ himself on board some Vessel, anchor-
 “ ing at Sea, remote from all Land-pro-
 “ spect, whilst it was yet a Calm, he view'd
 “ the ponderous Machine firm and mo-
 “ tionless in the midst of the smooth
 “ Ocean, and consider'd its Foundations
 “ beneath, together with its Cordage,
 “ Masts, and Sails above. How easily
 “ wou'd he see *the Whole* one regular
 “ Structure, all things depending on one
 “ another; the Uses of the Rooms *below*,
 “ the Lodgments, and Conveniences of
 “ Men and Stores? But being ignorant
 “ of the Intent or Design of all *above*,

Part 2.



“ wou’d he pronounce the Masts and Cor-
 “ dage to be uselefs and cumberfom, and
 “ for this reason condemn the Frame, and
 “ despise *the Architect*? O my Friend!
 “ let us not thus betray our Ignorance;
 “ but confider where we are, and in what
 “ a Universe. Think of the many Parts
 “ of the vast Machine, in which we have
 “ so little insight, and of which it is im-
 “ possible we shou’d know the Ends and
 “ Uses; when instead of seeing to the
 “ highest *Pendants*, we see only some *lower*
 “ *Deck*, and are in this dark Case of Flesh,
 “ confin’d even to *the Hold*, and meanest
 “ Station of the Vessel.

Universal
 Mind.

“ Now having recogniz’d this uniform
 “ consistent Fabrick, and own’d the *Uni-*
 “ *versal System*, we must of consequence
 “ acknowledg a *Universal MIND*; which
 “ no ingenious Man can be tempted to
 “ disown, except thro the Imagination of
 “ Disorder in the Universe, its Seat. For
 “ can it be suppos’d of any-one in the
 “ World, that being in some Desert far
 “ from Men, and hearing there a perfect
 “ Symphony of Musick, or seeing an ex-
 “ act Pile of regular Architecture arising
 “ gradually from the Earth in all its Or-
 “ ders and Proportions, he shou’d be per-
 “ suaded that at the bottom there was no
 “ *Design* accompanying this, no secret
 “ Spring of *Thought*; no active *Mind*?
 “ Wou’d

" Wou'd he, because he saw no Hand, Sect. 4.
 " deny the Handy-Work, and suppose that
 " each of these compleat and perfect Sys-
 " tems were fram'd, and thus united in
 " just Symmetry, and conspiring Order,
 " either by the accidental blowing of the
 " Winds, or rolling of the Sands ?

" WHAT is it then shou'd so disturb Distur-
 " our Views of *Nature*, as to destroy that bance,
 " Unity of Design and Order of a *Mind*, balance,
 " which otherwise wou'd be so apparent ?
 " All we can see either of the Heavens or
 " Earth, demonstrates Order and Perfec-
 " tion ; so as to afford the noblest Subjects
 " of Contemplation to Minds, like yours,
 " enrich'd with Sciences and Learning.
 " All is delightful, amiable, rejoicing, ex-
 " cept with relation to *Man* only, and Human
 " his Circumstances, which seem unequal. Affairs.
 " Here the Calamity and Ill arises ; and
 " hence the Ruin of this goodly Frame.
 " All perishes on this account ; and the
 " whole Order of the Universe, elsewhere
 " so firm, intire, and immoveable, is here
 " o'erthrown, and lost by this one View ;
 " in which we refer all things to our-
 " selves ; submitting the Interest of *the* Selfishness,
 " *Whole* to the Good and Interest of so
 " small a *Part*.

" BUT how is it you complain of the
 " unequal State of Man, and of the few

Part 2. " Advantages allow'd him above the
 ~~~~~ " Beasts? What can a Creature claim, so  
 " little differing from 'em, or whose Me-  
 " rit appears so little above 'em, except in  
 " *Wisdom* and *Virtue*, to which so few  
 " conform? Man may be virtuous; and  
 " by being so, is happy. His Merit is  
 " Reward. By Virtue he deserves; and in  
 " Virtue only can meet his Happiness de-  
 " serv'd. But if even *Virtue* it-self be un-  
 " provided for, and *Vice* more prosperous,  
 " be the better Choice; if this (as you  
 " suppose) be in the Nature of Things,  
 " then is all Order in reality inverted, and  
 " supreme Wisdom lost: Imperfection and  
 " Irregularity being, after this manner, un-  
 " doubtedly too apparent in the moral  
 " World.

*Virtue and  
 Vice.*

*Their  
 Power,  
 Effect.*

" HAVE you then, e'er you pronounc'd  
 " this Sentence, consider'd of the State of  
 " *Virtue* and *Vice* with respect to *this Life*  
 " *merely*; so as to say, with assurance,  
 " When, and how far, in what particu-  
 " lars, and how circumstantiated, the one  
 " or the other is *Good* or *Ill*? You who  
 " are skill'd in other Fabricks and Com-  
 " positions, both of Art and Nature, have  
 " you consider'd of the Fabrick of *the*  
 " *Mind*, the Constitution of the Soul, the  
 " Connexion and Frame of all its Passions  
 " and Affections; to know accordingly  
 " the Order and Symmetry of the Part,  
 " and


“ and how it either improves or suffers; Sect. 4.  
 “ what its Force is, when naturally pre-  
 “ serv'd in its sound State; and what be- *Improve-*  
 “ comes of it, when corrupted and a- *ment.*  
 “ bus'd? Till this (my Friend!) be well  
 “ examin'd and understood, how shall we  
 “ judg either of the Force of *Virtue*, or  
 “ Power of *Vice*? Or in what manner  
 “ either of these may work to our Happi-  
 “ ness or Undoing?

“ HERE therefore is that INQUIRY  
 “ we shou'd first make. But who is there  
 “ can afford to make it as he ought? If  
 “ happily we are born of a good Nature;  
 “ if a liberal Education has form'd in us  
 “ a generous Temper and Disposition, *Temper.*  
 “ well-regulated Appetites, and worthy  
 “ Inclinations, 'tis well for us; and so  
 “ indeed we esteem it. But who is there  
 “ endeavours to give these to himself,  
 “ or to advance his Portion of Happi-  
 “ ness in this kind? Who thinks of  
 “ improving, or so much as of preserving  
 “ his Share, in a World where it must of  
 “ necessity run so great a hazard, and  
 “ where we know an honest Nature is  
 “ so easily corrupted? All other things  
 “ relating to us are preserv'd with Care,  
 “ and have some Art or OEconomy be-  
 “ longing to 'em; this which is nearest  
 “ related to us, and on which our Hap-  
 “ piness depends, is alone committed to  
 “ Chance;

Part 2. “ Chance : And *Temper* is the only thing  
 ~~~~~ “ ungovern’d, whilst it governs all the rest.

Appetites. “ THUS we inquire concerning what
 “ is good and futable to our Appetites ;
 “ but what Appetites are good and futa-
 “ ble to us, is no part of our Examina-
 “ tion. We inquire what is according to
 “ *Interest, Policy, Fashion, Vogue* ; but it
 “ seems wholly strange, and out of the
 “ way, to inquire what is *according to NA-*
 “ *TURE.* The Ballance of EUROPE, of
Ballance. “ Trade, of Power, is strictly fought af-
 “ ter ; while few have heard of *the Bal-*
 “ *lance of their Passions,* or thought of
 “ holding these Scales even. Few are ac-
 “ quainted with this Province, or know-
 “ ing in these Affairs. But were we more
 “ so (as this *Inquiry* wou’d make us) we
 “ shou’d then see Beauty and Decorum
 “ here, as well as elsewhere in Nature ;
 “ and the Order of the Moral World
 “ wou’d equal that of the Natural. By
 “ this the *Beauty of VIRTUE* wou’d ap-
 “ pear ; and hence (as has been shewn)
Virtue, “ *the Supreme and Sovereign BEAUTY,*
Deity. “ the Original of all which is Good or
 “ Amiable.

“ BUT lest I shou’d appear at last too
 “ like an *Enthusiast*, I chuse to express
 “ my Sense, and conclude this *Philosophical*
 “ *Sermon* in the words of one of those an-
 “ tients

" tient *Philologists*, whom you are us'd to Sect. 4.
 " esteem. For *Divinity it-self*, says he, 
 " is surely *beauteous*, and of all *Beautys*
 " the *brightest*; tho not a *beauteous Body*,
 " but that from whence the *Beauty* of
 " *Bodys* is deriv'd: Not a *beauteous*
 " *Plain*, but that from whence the *Plain*
 " looks *beautiful*. The *River's Beauty*,
 " the *Sea's*, the *Heaven's*, and *Heavenly*
 " *Constellations*, all flow from hence as
 " from a *Source Eternal and Incorrupt-*
 " *tible*. As *Beings* partake of this, they
 " are *fair*, and *flourishing*, and *happy*: As
 " they are *lost* to this, they are *deform'd*,
 " *perish'd* and *lost*."

WHEN THEOCLES had thus spoken,
 he was formally complimented by our *Two*
Companions. I was going to add some-
 thing in the same way: but he presently
 stop'd me, by saying, he shou'd be scan-
 daliz'd, if instead of commending him, I
 did not according to my *Character*, chuse
 rather to criticize some part or other of his
 long Discourse.

IF it must be so then, reply'd I; in the
 first place, give me leave to wonder that,
 instead of the many Arguments common-
 ly brought for proof of a *Deity*, you make
 use only of one single-one to build on. I
 expected to have heard from you, in custo-
 mary

Part 2. mary form, of a *first Cause*, a *first Being*,
 and a *Beginning of Motion*: How clear the
 Idea was of an *immaterial Substance*: And
 how plainly it appear'd, that at some time
 or other *Matter must have been created*.
 But as to all this, you are silent. As for
 what is said, of "A material unthinking
 Substance being never able to have
 produc'd an immaterial thinking one;"
 I readily grant it: but on the condition,
 that this great Maxim of *Nothing being
 ever made from Nothing*, may hold as
 well on my side as my Adversary's: And
 then, I suppose, that whilst the World en-
 dures, he will be at a loss how to assign a
 Beginning to *Matter*; or how to suggest a
 Possibility of annihilating it. The spiri-
 tual Men may, as long as they please, re-
 present to us, in the most eloquent man-
 ner, "That *Matter* consider'd in a thou-
 sand different Shapes, join'd and dis-
 join'd, vary'd and modify'd to Eternity,
 can never, of it-self, afford one single
 Thought, never occasion or give rise to
 any thing like Sense or Knowledg."
 Their Argument will hold good against
 a DEMOCRITUS, an EPICURUS, or
 any of the elder or latter *Atomists*. But
 it will be turn'd on them by an examining
Academist: and when the two Substances
 are fairly set asunder, and consider'd a-
 part, as different kinds; 'twill be as strong
 Sense, and as good Argument, to say as
 well

Matter
 and
 Thought.

well of the *immaterial kind*; “ That do Sect. 4.
 “ with it as you please, modify it a thou-
 “ sand ways, purify it, exalt it, sublime
 “ it, torture it ever so much, or rack it,
 “ as they say, with thinking; you will
 “ never be able to produce or force the
 “ contrary Substance out of it.” The
 poor Dregs of sorry *Matter* can no more
 be made out of the simple pure Substance
 of immaterial *Thought*, than the high Spi-
 rits of *Thought* or *Reason* can be extracted
 from the gross Substance of heavy *Matter*.
 So let the *Dogmatists* make of this Argu-
 ment what they can.

BUT for your part, continu’d I, as you
 have stated the Question, ’tis not about
 what was *first*, or *foremost*; but what
 is *instant*, and *now* in being. “ For if
 “ DEITY be *now* really extant; if by any
 “ good Token it appears that there is at
 “ *this present* a universal Mind; ’twill ea-
 “ sily be yielded there *ever* was one.”—
 This is your Argument.—You go (if I
 may say so) upon *Fact*, and would prove
 that things *actually are* in such a state and
 condition, which if they really *were*, there
 wou’d indeed be no dispute left. Your
 UNION is your main Support. Yet
 how is it you prove this? What Demon-
 stration have you given? What have
 you so much as offer’d at, beyond *bare*
Probability? So far are you from demon-
 strating

Part 2. *strating* any thing, that if this uniting Scheme be the chief Argument for Deity (as you tacitly allow) you seem rather to have demonstrated, "That the Case it-self is incapable of Demonstration." For, "How, say you, can a narrow Mind see *All Things*?"—And yet if, in reality, It sees not *All*, It had as good see *Nothing*. The demonstrable part is still as far behind. For grant that this *All*, which lies within our view or knowledge, is orderly and united, as you suppose: this mighty *All* is a mere Point still, a very Nothing compar'd to what remains.

'Atheistical Hypothesis. " 'Tis only a separate *By-World* (we'll say) of which perhaps there are, in the wide Waste, Millions besides, as horrid and deform'd, as this of ours is regular and proportion'd. In length of time, amidst the infinite Hurry and Shock of Beings, this *single odd World*, by accident, might have been struck out, and cast into some Form (as among infinite *Chances*, what is there which may not happen?) But for the rest of *Matter*, 'tis of a different hue. Old *Father CHAOS* (as the Poets call him) in these wild Spaces, reigns absolute, and upholds his Realms of Darkness. He presses hard upon our Frontier; and one day, belike, shall by a furious Inroad recover his lost Right, conquer his Rebel-State, and re-unite

“ unite us to primitive *Discord* and *Con-* Sect. 4.
fusion.”

THIS, said I, THEOCLES! (concluding my Discourse) is all I dare offer in opposition to your *Philosophy*. I imagin'd, indeed, you might have given me more Scope: But you have retrench'd your-self in narrower Bounds. So that to tell you truth, I look upon your *Theology* to be hardly so fair or open as that of our Divines in general. They are strict, it's true, as to *Names*; but allow a greater Latitude in *Things*. Hardly indeed can they bear a home-Charge, a downright questioning of *Deity*: But in return, they give always fair play against NATURE, NATURE and allow her to be challeng'd for her arraign'd. Failings. She may freely err, and we as freely censure. *Deity*, they think, is not accountable for her: Only she for herself. But you are straiter, and more precise in this point. You have unnecessarily brought *Nature* into the Controversy, and taken upon you to defend her Honour so highly, that I know not whether it may be safe for me to question her.

LET not this trouble you, reply'd THEOCLES: but be free to censure *Nature*; whatever may be the Consequence. 'Tis only *my Hypothesis* can suffer. If I defend it ill, my Friends need not be scandaliz'd.

Part 2. daliz'd. They are fortify'd, no doubt, with stronger Arguments for a Deity, and can well employ those *metaphysical* Weapons, of whose Edge you seem so little apprehensive. I leave them to dispute this Ground with you, whenever they think fit. For my own Arguments, if they can be suppos'd to make any part of this Defence, they may be look'd upon only as distant Lines, or Outworks, which may easily perhaps be won; but without any danger to the Body of the Place.

NOTWITHSTANDING, then, said I, that you are willing I shou'd attack NATURE in *Form*, I chuse to spare her in all other Subjects, except MAN only. How comes it, I intreat you, that in this noblest of Creatures, and worthiest her Care, she shou'd appear so very weak and impotent; whilst in mere *Brutes*, and the irrational Species, she acts with so much Strength, and exerts such hardy Vigour? Why is she spent so soon in feeble *Man*, who is found more subject to Diseases, and of fewer years than many of the *wild Creatures*? They range secure; and proof against all the Injurys of Seasons and Weather, want no help from *Art*, but live in careless Ease, discharg'd of Labour, and freed from the cumberfom Baggage of a necessitous human Life.

Life. In Infancy more helpful, vigorous in Age, with Senses quicker, and more natural Sagacity, they pursue their Interests, Joys, Recreations, and cheaply purchase both their Food and Maintenance; cloth'd and arm'd by Nature her-self; who provides them both a Couch and Mansion. So has Nature order'd for the rest of Creatures. Such is their Hardiness, Robustness, Vigour. Why not the same for *Man*?—

Sect. 4.

AND do you stop thus short, said THEOCLES, in your Expostulation? Methinks 'twere as easy to proceed, now you are in the way; and instead of laying claim to some *few* Advantages of other Creatures, you might as well stand for *All*, and complain "That *Man*, for his part, *Nature in Man.* shou'd be any thing less than a Consumption of all Advantages and Privileges " which Nature can afford." Ask not merely, Why *Man* is naked, why unhoof'd, why slower-footed than the Beasts? Ask, " Why he has not *Wings* also for the " Air, *Fins* for the Water, and so on; that " he might take possession of *each* Element, and reign in *All*?"

NOT so, said I, neither. This would be to rate him high indeed! As if he were, by Nature, LORD of *All*: which is more than I cou'd willingly allow.

'TIS

Part 2.



'Tis enough, reply'd he, that this is yielded. For if we allow once a *Subordination* in his Case; if *Nature* her-self be not for MAN, but *Man* for NATURE; then must *Man*, by his good leave, submit to the *Elements* of NATURE, and not the *Elements* to him. Few of these are at all fitted to him; and none perfectly. If he be left in *Air*, he falls headlong; for Wings were not assign'd him. In *Water* he soon sinks. In *Fire* he consumes. Within *Earth* he suffocates.—


As for what Dominion he may naturally have in other Elements, said I, my concern truly is not very great in his behalf; since by Art he can even exceed the Advantages Nature has given to other Creatures: But for the *Air*, methinks it had been wonderfully obliging in Nature to have allow'd him Wings.

Volatiles.

AND what would he have gain'd by it, reply'd THEOCLES? For consider what an Alteration of *Form* must have ensu'd. Observe in one of those wing'd Creatures, whether the whole Structure be not made subservient to this purpose, and all other Advantages sacrific'd to this single

Anatomy.

Operation. The Anatomy of the Creature shews it, in a manner, to be *all Wing*: its chief Bulk being compos'd of
two

two exorbitant Muscles, which exhaust the Sect. 4.
 Strength of all the other, and engross (if )
 I may say so) the whole OEconomy of
 the Frame. 'Tis thus the aerial Racers
 are able to perform so rapid and strong a
 Motion, beyond comparison with any o-
 ther kind, and far exceeding their little
 share of Strength elsewhere: these Parts
 of theirs being made in such superior
 proportion, as in a manner *to starve* their
 Companions. And in Man's Architec-
 ture, of so different an Order, were the
 flying Engines to be affix'd; must not
 the other Members suffer, and the multi-
 ply'd Parts starve one another? What
 think you of the Brain in this Partition? *The Brain*
 Is it not like to prove *a Starveling*? Or
 would you have it be maintain'd at the
 same high rate, and draw the chief Nou-
 rishment to it-self, from all the rest? —

I UNDERSTAND you, said I, THE-
 OCLES (interrupting him:) The Brain
 certainly is a great *Starver*, where it a-
 bounds; and the thinking People of the
 World, the *Philosophers* and *Virtuoso's* es-
 pecially, must be contented (I find) with
 a moderate Share of bodily Advantages,
 for the sake of what they call *Parts* and *Parts*
Capacity in another sense. The Parts, it
 seems, of one kind agree ill in their OEco-
 nomy with the Parts of the other. But
 to make this even on both sides, let us

Part 2. turn the Tables ; and the Case, I suppose, will stand the same with the MILO's of the Age, the Men of bodily Prowess and Dexterity. For not to mention a vulgar sort, such as *Wrestlers, Vaulters, Racers, Hunters* ; what shall we say of our fine-bred Gentlemen, our *Riders, Fencers, Dancers, Tennis-players*, and such like ? 'Tis the Body surely is the *Starver* here : and if the Brain were such a terrible Devourer in the other way ; the Body and bodily Parts seem to have their Reprisals in this Rank of Men.

If then, said he, the Case stands thus between *Man and Man*, how must it stand between *Man and a quite different Creature* ? *Balance.* If the *BALLANCE* be so nice, that the least thing breaks it, even in Creatures of the same Frame and Order ; of what fatal effect must it be to change *the Order* it-self, and make some essential Alteration in the Frame ? Consider therefore how it is we censure *Nature* in these and such-like Cases. “ Why, says one, was I “ not made by Nature strong as a *Horse* ? “ Why not hardy and robust as this “ *Brute-Creature* ? or nimble and active “ as that other ? ”——And yet when uncommon Strength, Agility, and Feats of Body are subjoin'd, even in our own Species, see what befalls ! So that for a Person thus in love with an *Athletick MILO-*

NEAN Constitution, it were better, me- Sect. 4.
thinks, and more modest in him, to change
the Expostulation, and ask, " Why was
" I not made in good earnest *a very*
" BRUTE?" For that would be more
futable.

I AM apt indeed, said I, to think that
the Excellence of MAN lies somewhat
different from that of *a Brute*: and that
such amongst us as are more truly *Men*,
shou'd naturally aspire to manly Quali-
tys, and leave the Brute his own. But
Nature, I see, has done well to morti-
fy us in this particular, by furnishing us
with such slight Stuff, and in such a ten-
der Frame, as is indeed wonderfully com-
modious to support that Man-Excellence
of *Thought* and *Reason*; but wretchedly
scanty and ineffectual for other Purpo-
ses. As if it were her very Design, " To
" hinder us from aspiring ridiculously
" to what was misbecoming our Cha-
" racter."


I SEE, said THEOCLES, you are not
one of those timorous Arguers who trem-
ble at every Objection rais'd against their
Opinion or Belief, and are so intent in up-
holding their *own* side of the Argument,
that they are unable to make the least
Concession on *the other*. Your Wit allows
you to divert your-self with whatever oc-

Part 2. curs in the Debate: And you can pleasantly improve even what your Antagonist brings as a Support to his own Hypothesis. This indeed is a fairer sort of Practice than what is common now-a-days. But 'tis no more than futable to your *Character*. And were I not afraid of speaking with an Air of Compliment, in the midst of a philosophical Debate; I shou'd tell you perhaps what I thought of the becoming manner of your SCEPTICISM, in opposition to a kind of Bigot-Scepticks; who forfeit their Right to the *philosophick Character*, and retain hardly so much as that of the *Gentleman* or *Good-Companion*.——But to our Argument.——

*Distribu-
tion,*

SUCH then, continu'd he, is the admirable Distribution of NATURE, her adapting and adjusting not only the *Stuff* or *Matter* to the *Shape* and *Form*, and even the *Shape* it-self and *Form* to the *Circumstance*, *Place*, *Element* or *Region*; but also the *Affections*, *Appetites*, *Sensations*, mutually to *each other*, as well as to the *Matter*, *Form*, *Action*, and all besides:

“ All manag'd *for the best*, with perfect
 “ Frugality and just *Reserve*: profuse to
 “ none, but bountiful to all: never em-
 “ ploying in one thing more than enough;
 “ but with exact OEconomy retrenching
 “ the superfluous, and adding Force to
 “ what is *principal* in every thing.” And
 is

is not THOUGHT and REASON *prin-* Sect. 4.
cipal in Man? Wou'd he have no *Reserve* 
 for these? no saving for this part of his *Principal*
 Engine? Or wou'd he have the same Stuff *Part.*
 or Matter, the same Instruments or Or-
 gans serve alike for different purposes,
 and an Ounce be equivalent to a Pound?
 — It cannot be. What Wonders, then,
 can he expect from a few Ounces of Blood
 in such a narrow Vessel, fitted for so small
 a District of Nature? Will he not rather
 think highly of that NATURE, which
 has thus manag'd his Portion for him, to
 best advantage, with this happy *Reserve*
 (happy indeed for him, if he knows and
 uses it!) by which he has so much a bet-
 ter Use of Organs than any other Crea- *Reason.*
 ture? by which he holds his Reason, is a
Man, and not a *Beast*?

BUT * Beasts, said I, have *Instincts*, *Instinct.*
 which Man has not.

TRUE, said he, they have indeed Per-
 ceptions, Sensations, and † *Pre-sensations*
 (if I may use the Expression) which Man, *Animals.*
 for his part, has not in any proportionable
 degree. Their Females, newly pregnant,
 and before they have bore Young, have a
 clear Prospect or *Pre-sensation* of their State

* *Supra*, p. 92, 93, &c. and 131, 132. And VOL. III.
 p. 216, 217, &c.

† *Infra*, p. 412.

Part 2. which is to follow ; know what to provide, and how, in what manner, and at what time. How many things do they pre-ponderate ? How many at once comprehend ? The Seasons of the Year, the Country, Climate, Place, Aspect, Situation, the Basis of their Building, the Materials, Architecture ; the Diet and Treatment of their Offspring ; in short, the whole OEconomy of their Nursery : and all this as perfectly at first, and when unexperienc'd, as at any time of their Life afterwards.

Human Kind,

And “ *Why not this*, say you, in Human Kind ? ” Nay, rather on the contrary, I ask “ *Why this ?* Where was “ the Occasion or Use ? Where the Necessity ? Why this Sagacity for *Men* ? “ Have they not what is better, in another “ kind ? Have they not Reason and Discourse ? Does not this instruct them ? “ What need then of the other ? Where “ wou’d be the prudent Management at “ this rate ? Where the *Reserve* ? ”

THE *Young* of most other *Kinds*, continu’d he, are instantly helpful to themselves, sensible, vigorous, know to shun Danger, and seek their Good : A *human Infant* is of all the most helpless, weak, infirm. And wherefore shou’d it not have been thus order’d ? Where is the loss in such a Species ? Or what is *Man* the worse for this Defect, amidst such large Supplies ?

plys? Does not this *Defect* engage him the more strongly to Society, and force him to own that he is purposely, and not by accident, made rational and *sociable*; and can no otherwise increase or subsist, than in that *social* Intercourse and Community which is his *natural State*? Is not both conjugal Affection, and natural Affection to Parents, Duty to Magistrates, Love of a common City, Community, or Country, with the other Dutys and social Parts of Life, deduc'd from hence, and founded in these very *Wants*? What can be happier than such a Deficiency, as is the occasion of so much Good? What better than a Want so abundantly made up, and answer'd by so many Enjoyments? Now if there are still to be found among Mankind such as even in the midst of these Wants seem not asham'd to affect a Right of Independency, and deny themselves to be by Nature *sociable*; where wou'd their Shame have been, had Nature otherwise supply'd these Wants? What Duty or Obligation had been ever thought of? What Respect or Reverence of Parents, Magistrates, their Country, or their Kind? Wou'd not their full and self-sufficient State more strongly have determin'd them to throw off *Nature*, and deny the *Ends* and *Author* of their Creation?



WHILST THEOCLES argu'd thus concerning NATURE, the old Gentleman, my Adversary, express'd great Satisfaction in hearing me, as he thought, refused, and my Opinions expos'd. For he wou'd needs believe these to be strongly my Opinions, which I had only started as Objections in the Discourse. He endeavour'd to reinforce the Argument by many Particulars from the common Topicks of the *School-men* and *Civilians*. He added withal, " That it was better for me " to declare my Sentiments openly : for " he was sure I had strongly imbib'd that " Principle, that * *the State of Nature* was " *a State of War*."

*State of
Nature.*

THAT it was no *State of Government*, or *publick Rule*, reply'd I, you your-self allow. I do so. Was it then a *State of Fellowship*, or *Society*? No : " For when Men enter'd first into Society, " they pass'd from *the State of Nature* in- " to that new one which is founded upon " *Compact*." And was that former State a *tolerable* one? Had it been absolutely intolerable, there had never been any such. Nor cou'd we properly call that a *State*, which cou'd not stand or endure for the least time. If Man therefore

* VOL. I. p. 109, &c.

cou'd

con'd *endure* to live without Society ; and Sect. 4.
 if it be true that he *actually* liv'd so, when
 in the *State of Nature* ; how can it be said,
 " That he is by *Nature sociable* ? "

THE old Gentleman seem'd a little disturb'd at my Question. But having recover'd himself, he said in answer, " That
 " MAN indeed, from his own *natural Inclination*, might not, perhaps, have been
 " mov'd to associate ; but rather from some
 " particular *Circumstances*."

HIS *Nature* then, said I, was not so very good, it seems ; since having no *natural Affection*, or *friendly Inclination* belonging to him, he was forc'd into a social State, *against his will* : And this, not from any necessity in respect of outward Things (for you have allow'd him a tolerable Subsistence) but in probability from such Inconveniences as arose chiefly from himself, and his own malignant Temper and Principles. And indeed 'twas no wonder if Creatures who were *naturally* thus unsociable, shou'd be as naturally mischievous and troublesome. If, *according to their Nature*, they cou'd live out of Society, with so little Affection for one another's Company, 'tis not likely that upon occasion they wou'd spare one another's Persons. If they were so fullen as not to meet for *Love*, 'tis more than probable they

Part 2. they wou'd fight for *Interest*. And thus
 from your own Reasoning it appears,
 State of Nature. " That the *State of Nature* must in all
 " likelihood have been little different from
 " a *State of WAR*."

HE was going to answer me with some sharpness, as by his Looks appear'd ; when THEOCLES interposing, desir'd, That as he had occasion'd this Dispute, he might be allow'd to try if he cou'd end it, by setting the Question in a fairer Light. You see, said he to the old Gentleman, what Artifice PHILOCLES made use of, when he engag'd you to allow, that the State of Nature and that of Society were perfectly distinct. But let us question him now in his turn, and see whether he can demonstrate to us, " That " there can be naturally any *Human State* " which is not *social*."

WHAT is it then, said the old Gentleman, which we call the *State of Nature* ?

NOT that imperfect rude Condition of Mankind, said THEOCLES, which some imagine ; but which, if it ever were in Nature, cou'd never have been of the least continuance, or any-way *tolerable*, or sufficient for the Support of human Race. Such a Condition cannot indeed so properly be call'd a *State*. For what if
 speaking

speaking of an Infant just coming into the World, and in the moment of the Birth, I shou'd fancy to call this *a State* ; wou'd it be proper ?

HARDLY so, I confess,

JUST such *a State*, therefore, was that which we suppose of MAN, e'er yet he enter'd into *Society*, and became in truth *a Human Creature*. 'Twas the rough Draught of Man, the *Essay* or *first Effort* of Nature, a Species *in the Birth*, a Kind as yet *unform'd* ; not in its *natural State*, but under *Violence*, and still restless, till it attain'd its natural Perfection.

AND thus, said THEOCLES (addressing still more particularly to the old Gentleman) the Case must necessarily stand, even on the supposal " That there was
 " ever such a Condition or *State* of Men,
 " when as yet they were unassociated, un-
 " acquainted, and consequently without
 " any Language or Form of Art." But
 " That it was their *natural State*, to live
 " thus separately," can never without Absurdity be allow'd. For sooner may you divest the Creature of any other Feeling or Affection, than that towards *Society* and his *Likeness*. Allowing you, however, the Power of divesting him at pleasure ; allowing you to reduce even whole
 Parts

Part 2.

*State of
 Nature.*

Parts and Members of his present Frame ; wou'd you transform him thus, and call him still *a Man* ? Yet better might you do this indeed, than you cou'd strip him of his *natural Affections*, separate him from all his *Kind*, and inclosing him like some solitary *Insect* in a Shell, declare him still *a MAN*. So might you call the human Egg, or Embrio, *the Man*. The Bug which breeds the Butterfly is more properly *a Fly*, tho without Wings, than this imaginary Creature is *a Man*. For tho his outward Shape were *human*, his Passions, Appetites, and Organs must be wholly different. His whole inward Make must be revers'd, to fit him for such a recluse OEconomy, and separate Subsistence.

To explain this a little further, continu'd he : Let us examine this pretended *State of Nature* ; how and on what Foundation it must stand. “ For either *Man* “ must have been from Eternity, or not. “ If from Eternity, there cou'd be no “ *primitive or original State*, no *State of* “ *Nature*, other than we see at present before our eyes. If not from Eternity, he “ arose either *all at once* (and consequently “ he was at the very *first* as he is *now*) or “ *by degrees*, thro several Stages and Conditions, to that in which he is at length “ settled, and has continu'd for so many “ *Generations.*”

FOR

FOR instance, let us suppose he sprang, as the old Poets feign'd, from a *big-belly'd Oak* : and then belike he might resemble more a *Man-drake* than a MAN. Let us suppose him at first with little more of Life than is discover'd in that Plant which they call *the Sensitive*. But when *the Mother-Oak* had been some time deliver'd, and the false Birth by some odd Accident or Device was wrought into Form ; the Members were then fully display'd, and the Organs of Sense began to unfold themselves.

" Here sprang an *Ear* : there peep'd an
 " *Eye*. Perhaps a *Tail* too came in com-
 " pany. For what *Superfluitys* Nature
 " may have been charg'd with at first,
 " is difficult to determine. They dropt
 " off, it seems, in time ; and happily
 " have left things, at last, in a good posi-
 " ture, and (to a wonder !) just as they
 " shou'd be."

THIS surely is the lowest View of *the original Affairs* of human Kind. For if A PROVIDENCE, and not CHANCE, gave *Man* his being, our Argument for his *social Nature* must surely be the stronger. But admitting his Rise to be, as we have describ'd, and as a certain sort of Philosophers wou'd needs have it ; Nature has then had no Intention at all, no Meaning or Design in this whole Matter. So how
 any

Part 2. any thing can be call'd *natural* in the Case;
 how any *State* can be call'd a *State of Nature*, or according to *Nature*, one more than another, I know not.

State of
Nature.

LET us go on however, and on their Hypothesis consider, Which *State* we may best call *Nature's own*. " She has by Accident, thro many Changes and Chances, rais'd a Creature, which springing at first from rude Seeds of *Matter*, proceeded till it became what now it is; and arriv'd where for many Generations it has been at a stay." In this long Procession (for I allow it any length whatever) I ask, " Where was it that this *State of Nature* cou'd begin?" The Creature must have endur'd many Changes: and each Change, whilst he was thus growing up, was as *natural*, one as another. So that either there must be reckon'd a hundred different States of *Nature*; or if one, it can be only *that* in which *Nature* was *perfect*, and her Growth *compleat*. Here where She *rested*, and attain'd her End, here must be her *State*, or no-where.

Cou'd she then *rest*, think you, in that desolate State before Society? Cou'd she maintain and propagate the Species, such as it now is, without Fellowship or Community? Shew it us in fact any-where,

where, amongst any of our own Kind. Sect. 4.
 For as for Creatures which may much resemble us in outward Form, if they differ yet in the least part of their Constitution, if their Inwards are of a different Texture, if their Skin and Pores are otherwise form'd or harden'd; if they have other Excrescences of Body, another Temper, other natural inseparable Habits or Affections, they are not truly *of our Kind*. If, on the other hand, their Constitution be as ours; their natural Parts or inward Facultys as strong, and their bodily Frame as weak as ours; if they have *Memory*, and *Senses*, and *Affections*, and a *Use of Organs* as ours: 'tis evident they can no more by their good-will abstain from *Society*, than they can possibly preserve themselves without it.

AND here (my Friends!) we ought to remember what we discours'd a-while since, and was advanc'd by PHILOCLES himself, concerning the * Weakness of human Bodys, and the necessitous State of *Man*, in respect of all other Creatures;
 " His long and helpless Infancy, his feeble
 " and defenceless Make, by which he is
 " more fitted to be a Prey himself, than
 " live by Prey on others." Yet 'tis impossible for him to subsist like any of those

* Pag. 300.

Part 2.

State of
Nature.

grazing Kinds. He must have better Provision and choicer Food than the raw Herbage ; a better Couch and Covering than the bare Earth or open Sky. How many Conveniences of other kinds does he stand in need of ? What Union and strict Society is requir'd between the *Sexes*, to preserve and nurse their growing *Offspring* ? This kind of *Society* will not, surely, be deny'd to MAN, which to every Beast of Prey is known proper, and *natural*. And can we allow *this* social Part to Man, and go no further ? Is it possible he shou'd *pair*, and live in Love and Fellowship with his *Partner* and *Offspring*, and remain still wholly wild, and speechless, and without those Arts of Storing, Building, and other OEconomy, as natural to him surely as to the *Beaver*, or to the *Ant*, or *Bee* ? Where, therefore, shou'd He break off from this *Society*, if once begun ? For that it began thus, as early as Generation, and grew into a Household and OEconomy, is plain. Must not this have grown soon into a *Tribe* ? and this *Tribe* into a *Nation* ? Or tho it remain'd a *Tribe* only ; was not this still a *Society* for mutual Defence and common Interest ? In short, if Generation be *natural*, if natural Affection and the Care and Nurture of the *Offspring* be *natural*, Things standing as they do with Man, and the Creature being of that Form and Constitution

tion he now is; it follows, "That *Society* Sect. 4.
 " must be also *natural to him*;" And
 " That out of *Society* and *Community*
 " he never *did*, nor ever *can* subsist."

To conclude, said he (addressing still to the two Companions) I will venture to add a word in behalf of PHILOCLEES: That since the Learned have such a fancy for this Notion, and love to talk of this imaginary *State of Nature*, I think 'tis even Charity to speak as *ill* of it as we possibly can. Let it be a *State of WAR, Rapine, and Injustice*. Since 'tis unsocial, let it e'en be as uncomfortable and as frightful as 'tis possible. To speak well of it, is to render it inviting, and tempt Men to turn Hermites. Let it, at least, be look'd on as many degrees worse than the worst Government in being. The greater Dread we have of *Anarchy*, the better *Country-men* we shall prove, and value more the *Laws* and *Constitution* under which we live, and by which we are protected from the outrageous Violences of such an unnatural State. In this I agree heartily with those Transformers of Human Nature, who considering it abstractedly and apart from Government or Society, represent it under monstrous Visages of *Dragons, Leviathans*, and I know not what devouring Creatures. They would have done well however, to have express'd

Part 2.

State of
Nature.

themselves more properly in their great Maxim. For to say in disparagement of Man, "That he is to Man a Wolf," appears somewhat absurd, when one considers that *Wolves* are to *Wolves* very kind and loving Creatures. The Sexes strictly join in the Care and Nurture of the Young; and this Union is continu'd still between 'em. They houl to one another, to bring Company; whether to hunt, or invade their Prey, or assemble on the discovery of a good Carcase. Even the swinish Kinds want not *common Affection*, and run in Herds to the assistance of their distress'd Fellows. The meaning therefore of this famous Sentence (if it has any meaning at all) must be, "That Man is naturally to Man, as a Wolf is to a tamer Creature;" as, for instance, to a Sheep. But this will be a little to the purpose as to tell us, "That there are differant Species or Characters of Men; That all have not this * wolfish Nature, but That one half at least are naturally innocent and mild." And thus the Sentence comes to nothing. For without belying Nature, and contradicting what is evident from *natural History*, *Fact*, and the plain *Course of Things*, 'tis impossible to assent to this ill-natur'd Proposition, when we have even done our best to make tolerable sense of it. — But such is Man.

* VOL. I. pag. 88. and 118.

kind!

kind! And even *here* HUMAN NATURE shews it-self, such as it is; not perfect, or absolutely successful, tho' rightly tending, and mov'd by proper and just Principles. 'Tis *here*, therefore, in *Philosophy*, as in the common *Conversations* of the World. As fond as Men are of *Company*, and as little able to enjoy any Happiness out of it, they are yet strangely addicted to the way of *Satir*. And in the same manner as a *malicious Censure* craftily worded, and pronounc'd with Assurance, is apt to pass with Mankind for shrewd WIT; so a *virulent Maxim* in bold Expressions, tho' without any Justness of Thought, is readily receiv'd for true PHILOSOPHY.

S E C T. V.

IN these Discourses the Evening ended; and Night advancing, we return'd home from our Walk. At Supper, and afterwards for the rest of that Night, THEOCLES said little. The Discourse was now manag'd chiefly by the *two* Companions, who turn'd it upon a new sort of Philosophy; such as you will excuse me (good PALEMÓN!) if I pass over with more haste.

THERE was much said, and with great *Miracles* Learning, on the Nature of *Spirits* and *Prodigys*, of which, the most astonishing *Apparitions*;

Part 2. Accounts were the most ravishing, with our Friends: who endeavour'd to exceed one another in this admirable way; and perform'd to a miracle in raising one another's Amazement. Nothing was so charming with them, as that which was disagreeing and odd: nothing so soothing, as that which mov'd Horror. In short, whatever was rational, plain, and easy, bore no relish; and nothing came amiss which was cross to Nature, out of Sort and Order, and in no Proportion or Harmony with the rest of Things. *Monstrous Births, Prodigys, Enchantments, Elementary Wars,* and *Convulsions* were our chief Entertainment. One wou'd have thought that in a kind of Rivalship between PROVIDENCE and NATURE, the *latter Lady* was made to appear as homely as possible; that her Deformitys might recommend and set off the Beautys of *the former*. For to do our Friends justice, I must own I thought their Intention to be sincerely *religious*. But this was not a Face of *Religion* I was like to be enamour'd with. It was not from hence I fear'd being made *enthusiastick*, or *superstitious*. If ever I became so, I found it wou'd rather be after THEOCLES's manner. The *Monuments* and *Church-yards* were not such powerful Scenes with me, as the *Mountains*, the *Plains*, the solemn *Woods* and *Groves*; of whose Inhabitants I chose much rather to hear, than of the

the other. And I was readier to fancy Sect. 5.
Truth in those poetical Fictions which THEOCLES made use of, than in any of his Friends ghastly Storys, so pompously set off, after the usual way, in a lofty Tone of Authority, and with an assuming Air of Truth.

YOU may imagine, PALEMON, that my * *Scepticism*, with which you so often reproach me, cou'd not well forsake me here: Nor cou'd it fail to give disturbance to our Companions, especially to the grave Gentleman who had clash'd with me some time before. He bore with me a-while; till having lost all patience, One must certainly, said he, be Master of no small share of Assurance, to hold out against the common Opinion of the World, and deny things which are known by the Report of the most considerable part of Mankind.

THIS, said I, is far from being my ease. You have never yet heard me deny any thing; tho I have question'd many. If I suspend my Judgment, 'tis because I have less Sufficiency than others. There are People, I know, who have so great a regard to every Fancy of *their own*, that they can believe their very *Dreams*. But

* VOL. III. pag. 71, 2, 3, 4, 5, &c. And 241, 2, 3, 4, And 316, 317, &c.

Part 2. I who cou'd never pay any such deference to my *sleeping* Fancys, am apt sometimes to question even my *waking* Thoughts, and examine, " Whether these are not *Dreams* too ; " since Men have a Faculty of dreaming sometimes with their Eyes open. You will own 'tis no small pleasure with Mankind to make their *Dreams* pass for *Realities* ; and that *the Love of Truth* is, in earnest, not half so prevalent as this *Passion* for *Novelty* and *Surprize*, join'd with a *Desire of making Impression*, and being admir'd. However, I am so charitable still, as to think there is more of innocent *Delusion*, than voluntary *Imposture* in the World : and that they who have most impos'd on Mankind, have been happy in a certain Faculty of imposing first upon themselves ; by which they have a kind of Salvo. for their Consciences, and are so much the more successful, as they can act their Part more naturally, and to *the life*. Nor is it to be esteem'd a Riddle, that Mens *Dreams* shou'd sometimes have the good fortune of passing with 'em for Truth ; when we consider, that in some Cases, that which was never so much as *dreamt* of, or related as *Truth*, comes afterwards to be believ'd by one who has often told it.

So that the greatest *Impostor* in the World, reply'd he, at this rate may be allow'd *sincere*.

As

As to the *main* of his *Imposture*, said I, perhaps he may; notwithstanding some pious Frauds made use of between whiles, in behalf of a Belief thought good and wholesom. And so very natural do I take this to be, that in all Religions, except the true, I took upon the greatest Zeal to be accompany'd with the strongest Inclination to deceive. For the Design and End being *the Truth*, 'tis not customary to hesitate or be scrupulous about the Choice of Means. Whether this be true or no, I appeal to the Experience of the last Age: in which 'twill not be difficult to find very remarkable Examples where *Imposture* and *Zeal*, *Bigotry* and *Hypocrisy* have liv'd together, in one and the same *Character*.

LET this be as it will, reply'd he, I am sorry, upon the whole, to find you of such an *incredulous* Temper.

'TIS just, said I, that you shou'd pity me as a Sufferer, for losing that Pleasure which I see others enjoy. For what stronger Pleasure is there with Mankind, or what do they earlier learn, or longer retain, than *the Love of hearing and relating things strange and incredible*? How wonderful a thing is *the Love of wondering*, and of raising *Wonder*! 'Tis the Delight of Children to hear Tales they never at, and

Part 2.

Wonder-
ment,

the Vice of Old Age to abound in strange
Stories of Times past. We come into the
World wondering at every thing; and
when our Wonder about common things is
over, we seek something new to wonder at.
Our last Scene is to tell Wonders of *our*
own, to all who will believe 'em. And a-
midst all this, 'tis well if TRUTH comes
off, but moderately tainted.

'TIS well, reply'd he, if with this *mo-*
derate FAITH of yours, you can believe
any *Miracles* whatever.

No matter, said I, how incredulous I
am of *modern Miracles*, if I have a right
Faith in those of *former times*, by paying
the deference due to sacred Writ. 'Tis
Credulity. here I am so much warn'd against *Creduli-*
ty, and enjoin'd never to believe even the
greatest Miracles which may be wrought,
in opposition to what has been already
taught me. And this Injunction I am so
well fitted to comply with, that I can
safely engage to keep still in the same *Faith*,
and promise *never to believe amiss*.

BUT is this a *Promise* which can well
be made?

IF not, and that my Belief indeed does
not absolutely depend upon my self, how
am I accountable for it? I may be justly
punish'd

punish'd for Actions, in which my Will is free ; but with what justice can I be challeng'd for my Belief, if in this I am not at my liberty ? If Credulity and Incredulity are Defects only in the Judgment ; and the best-meaning Person in the world may err on either side, whilst a much worse Man, by having better Parts, may judge far better of the Evidence of things : how can you punish him who errs, unless you wou'd punish *Weakness*, and say, 'tis just for Men to suffer for their Unhappiness, and not their Fault ?

I AM apt to think, said he, that very few of those who are punish'd for their *Incredulity*, can be said to be Sufferers for their *Weakness*.

TAKING it for granted then, reply'd I, that *Simplicity* and *Weakness* is more the Character of *the Credulous* than of *the Unbelieving* ; yet I see not, but that even this way still we are as liable to suffer by our *Weakness*, as in the contrary Case by an over-refin'd *Wit*. For if we cannot command our own Belief, how are we secure against those false Prophets, and their deluding Miracles, of which we have such Warning given us ? How are we safe from Heresy and false Religion ? *Credulity* being that which delivers us up to all Impostures of this sort, and which
actually

Part 2. actually at this day hold the *Pagan* and
Mahometan World in Error and blind Su-
Credulity. perstitution. Either therefore there is no
Punishment due to wrong Belief, because
we *cannot* believe as we will our-selves; or
if we *can*, why shou'd we not promise
never to believe amiss? Now in respect of
Miracles to come, the surest way never to
believe *amiss*, is never to believe *at all*.
For being satisfy'd of the Truth of our
Religion by past Miracles, so as to need
no other to confirm us; the Belief of new
may often do us harm, but can never do
us good. Therefore as the truest Mark
of a believing Christian is to seek after no
Sign or Miracle to come; so the safest
Station in Christianity is his who can be
mov'd by nothing of this kind, and is
thus Miracle-proof. For if the *Miracle* be
on the side of his Faith, 'tis superfluous,
and he needs it not; if against his Faith,
let it be as great as possible, he will ne-
ver regard it in the least, or believe it any
other than Imposture, tho coming from an
Angel. So that with all that *Incredulity*
for which you reproach me so severely, I
take my-self to be still the better and more
Orthodox Christian. At least I am more
sure of continuing so than you, who with
your *Credulity* may be impos'd upon by
such as are far short of *Angels*. For ha-
ving this preparatory Disposition, 'tis odds
you may come in time to believe Mi-
racles

racles in any of the different *Setts*, who, Sect. 5. we know, all pretend to them. I am persuaded therefore, that the best Maxim to go by, is that common one, “ That *Miracles are ceas’d* :” And I am ready to defend this Opinion of mine to be the most probable in it-self, as well as most futable to Christianity.

THIS Question, upon further Debate, happen’d to divide our ~~two~~ Companions. For the elderly Gentleman, my Antagonist, maintain’d, “ That the giving up of “ Miracles for the time present, wou’d be “ of great advantage to the Atheists.” The younger Gentleman, his Companion, question’d, “ Whether the allowing ’em “ might not be of as great advantage to “ the Enthusiasts and Sectarys, against “ the National Church : This of the two “ being the greatest Danger (he thought) “ both to Religion and the State.” He was resolv’d, therefore, for the future to be as cautious in examining these modern *Miracles*, as he had before been eager in seeking ’em. He told us very pleasantly what an Adventurer he had been of that kind ; and on how many Partys he had been engag’d, with a sort of People who were always on the hot Scent of some new *Prodigy* or *Apparition*, some upstart *Revelation* or *Prophecy*. This, he thought,

was

Part 2. was true *Fanaticism errant*. He had enough of this visionary Chace, and wou'd ramble no more in blind Corners of the World, as he had been formerly accustom'd, in ghostly Company of Spirit-hunters, Witchfinders, and Layers-out for hellish Storys and diabolical Transactions. There was no need, he thought, of such Intelligences from *Hell*, to prove the Power of *Heaven*, and Being of a *God*. And now at last he begun to see the Ridicule of laying such a stress on these Matters: As if a *Providence* depended on them, and *Religion* were at stake, when any of these wild Feats were question'd. He was sensible there were many good Christians who made themselves strong Partisans in this Cause; tho he cou'd not avoid wondring at it, now he began to consider, and look back.

Fanaticism.

THE HEATHENS, he said, who wanted Scripture, might have recourse to *Miracles*: And Providence perhaps had allow'd them their *Oracles* and *Prodigys*, as an imperfect kind of *Revelation*. The JEWS too, for their hard Heart, and harder Understanding, had this allowance; when stubbornly they ask'd for *Signs* and *Wonders*. But CHRISTIANS, for their parts, had a far better and truer *Revelation*; they had their plainer *Oracles*, a more rational Law, and clearer Scripture, carrying its own Force, and withal so well

well attested, as to admit of no dispute Sect. 5.
 And were I, continu'd he, to assign the
 exact time when Miracles probably might
 first have ceas'd, I shou'd be tempted to
 fancy it was when *Sacred Writ* took place,
 and was compleated.

THIS is Fancy indeed (reply'd the *Miracles*
 grave Gentleman) and a very dangerous *past,*
 one to that Scripture you pretend is of it- *present.*
 self so well attested. The Attestation of
 Men dead and gone, in behalf of Mira-
 cles past and at an end, can never surely
 be of equal force with Miracles present:
 And of these, I maintain, there are never
 wanting a Number sufficient in the World
 to warrant a *Divine Existence*. If there
 were no Miracles now-a-days, the World
 wou'd be apt to think there never were
 any. The present must answer for the Cre-
 dibility of the past. This is "*GOD wit-* *Human*
nessing for himself;" not "*Men for GOD.*" *Testimony.*
 For who shall witness for *Men*, if in the
 Case of Religion they have no Testimony
 from Heaven in their behalf?

WHAT it is may make the Report of
Men credible (said the younger Gentle-
 man) is another Question. But for mere
Miracles, it seems to me, they cannot be
 properly said "To witness either for
GOD or *Men*." For who shall witness
 for the *Miracles* themselves? And what
 tho

Part 2. tho they are ever so certain? What Security have we, that they are not acted by **DÆMONS**? What Proof that they are not wrought by *Magick*? In short, "What Trust is there to any thing above, or below, if the Signs are only of *Power*, and not of *Goodness*?"

AND are you so far improv'd then, reply'd the severe Companion, under your new *sceptical* Master (pointing to me) that you can thus readily discard all Miracles, as useless? —

THE young Gentleman, I saw, was somewhat daunted with this rough Usage of his Friend; who was going on still with his *Invective*. Nay then (said I, interposing) 'tis I who am to answer for this young Gentleman, whom you make to be my Disciple. And since his Modesty, I see, will not allow him to pursue what he has so handsomly begun, I will endeavour it my-self, if he will give me leave.

THE young Gentleman assented; and I went on, representing his fair Intention of establishing in the first place a rational and just Foundation for *our Faith*; so as to vindicate it from the Reproach of having no immediate Miracles to support it. He wou'd have done this (I said) undoubtedly,

doubtedly, by shewing how good Proof Sect. 5.
 we had already for our *sacred Oracles*,
 from the Testimony of the *Dead*; whose
 Characters and Lives might answer for
 them, as to the Truth of what they re-
 ported to us from God. This, however,
 was by no means "*Witnessing for GOD*,"
 as the zealous Gentleman had hastily ex-
 press'd himself. For this was above the
 reach either of Men, or Miracles. Nor
 could God witness *for himself*, or assert his
 Being any other way to Men, than "By ^{Divine}
 "revealing himself to their *Reason*, ap- ^{Testimony.}
 "pealing to their *Judgment*, and submit-
 "ting his Ways to their *Censure*, and cool
 "*Deliberation*." The Contemplation of
 the Universe, its Laws and Government,
 was (I aver'd) the only means which
 could establish the *sound Belief* of a DE-
 ITY. For what tho innumerable *Miracles*
 from every part assail'd the Sense, and
 gave the trembling Soul no respite? What ^{Miracles}
 tho the Sky shou'd suddenly open, and ^{no proof of}
 all kinds of Prodigys appear, Voices be ^{Divinity.}
 heard, or Characters read? What wou'd
 this evince more than "That there were
 "certain POWERS cou'd do all this?"
 But "What POWERS; Whether One, or
 "more; Whether *Superior*, or *Subaltern*;
 "Mortal, or *Immortal*; *Wise*, or *Foolish*;
 "Just, or *Unjust*; *Good* or *Bad*:" this
 wou'd still remain a Mystery; as wou'd
 the true Intention, the Infallibility or Cer-
 tainty

Part 2. tainty of whatever *these* POWERS asserted. Their Word could not be taken in their own case. They might silence Men indeed, but not convince them: since "POWER can never serve as Proof for * *Goodness*; and GOODNESS is the only Pledg of *Truth*." By GOODNESS alone, *Trust* is created. By GOODNESS *superior* POWERS may win Belief. They must allow their Works to be examin'd, their Actions criticiz'd: And thus, *thus* only, they may be confided in; "When, by repeated Marks their *Benevolence* is prov'd, and their *Character* of *Sincerity* and *Truth* establish'd." To whom therefore the Laws of this Universe and its Government appear just and uniform; to him they speak the Government of one JUST-ONE; to him they *reveal* and witness a GOD: and laying in him the Foundation of this *first* Faith, they fit him for a † *subsequent* One. He can then hearken to *Historical Revelation*: and is then fitted (and not till then) for the reception of any *Message* or miraculous *Notice* from Above; where he knows beforehand all is just and true. But this, no Power of Miracles, nor any Power besides his REASON, can make him know, or apprehend.

Revelation.

* VOL. I. p. 94. And VOL. III. p. 114.

† VOL. I. p. 298. And in this Volume, p. 269.

BUT

BUT now, continu'd I, since I have been thus long the *Defendent* only ; I am resolv'd to take up *offensive* Arms, and be Aggressor in my turn ; provided THEOCLES be not angry with me for borrowing Ground from his Hypothesis.

WHATEVER you borrow of his, reply'd my Antagonist, you are pretty sure of spoiling it : And as it passes thro your hands, you had best beware lest you seem rather to reflect on *Him* than *Me*.

I'LL venture it, said I ; whilst I maintain that most of those Maxims you build upon, are fit only to betray your own Cause. For whilst you are labouring to unhinge Nature ; whilst you are searching Heaven and Earth for Prodigys, and studying how to *miraculize* every thing ; you bring Confusion on the World, you break its Uniformity, and destroy that admirable Simplicity of Order from whence the ONE infinite and perfect Principle is known. Perpetual Strifes, Convulsions, Violences, Breach of Laws, Variation and Unsteadiness of Order, shew either no Consoul, or several uncontroul'd and un-subordinate Powers in Nature. We have before our eyes either the *Chaos* and *Atoms* of the ATHEISTS, or the *Magick* and

*Atheism
from Su-
perstition.*

Part 2. *Dæmons* of the POLYTHEISTS. Yet is this tumultuous System of the Universe asserted with the highest Zeal by some who wou'd maintain a DEITY. This is that Face of Things, and these the Features by which they represent *Divinity*. Hither the Eyes of our more inquisitive and ingenuous Youth are turn'd with care; lest they see any thing otherwise than in this perplex'd and amazing View. As if *Atheism* were the most natural Inference which cou'd be drawn from a regular and orderly State of Things! But after all this mangling and disfigurement of *Nature*; if it happens (as oft it does) that the amaz'd Disciple coming to himself, and searching leisurely into *Nature's Ways*, finds more of *Order*, *Uniformity*, and *Constancy* in Things than he suspected; he is of course driven into *Atheism*. And this merely by the Impressions he receiv'd from that preposterous System, which taught him to seek for DEITY in *Confusion*; and to discover PROVIDENCE in an *irregular disjointed World*.

Atheism
from Su-
perstition.

AND when you, reply'd he, with your newly-espous'd System, have brought all things to be as *uniform, plain, regular, and simple*, as you cou'd wish; I suppose you will send your Disciple to seek for DEITY in *Mechanism*; that is to say, in some exquisite System of *self-govern'd Matter*.

For

For what else is it you Naturalists make of Sect. 5.
the World, than a mere *Machine*?

NOTHING else, reply'd I, if to the Machine you allow a *Mind*. For in this case 'tis not a *Self-govern'd*, but a *God-govern'd* Machine.

AND what, are the Tokens, said he, which shou'd convince us? What Signs shou'd this dumb *Machine* give of its being thus govern'd?

THE present, reply'd I, are sufficient. It cannot possibly give stronger Signs of Life and steady Thought. Compare *our own Machines* with this great ONE; and see, Whether by their Order, Management and Motions, they betoken either so perfect a Life, or so consummate an Intelligence. The one is regular, steady, permanent; the other are irregular, variable, inconstant. In one there are the Marks of Wisdom and Determination; in the other, of Whimsy and Conceit: In one there appears Judgment; in the other, Fancy only: In one, Will; in the other, Caprice: In one Truth, Certainty, Knowledg; in the other, Error, Folly, and Madness. — But to be convinc'd there is something above, which thinks and acts, we want, it seems, the *latter* of these Signs; as supposing there can be no
Y 2 Thought

Part 2. Thought or Intelligence beside what is like *our own*! We sicken and grow weary with the orderly and regular Course of Things. Periods, and stated Laws, and Revolutions just and proportionable, work not upon us, nor win our Admiration, We must have Riddles, Prodigys, Matter for Surprize and Horror! By Harmony, Order and Concord, we are made *Atheists*: By Irregularity and Discord, *we are convinc'd of DEITY*! "The World is
 "mere Accident, if it proceed in Course;
 "but an Effect of Wisdom, if it runs
 "mad!"

*Atheism
 from Su-
 perstition.*

THUS I took upon me the part of a sound THEIST, whilst I endeavour'd to refute my Antagonist, and shew that his Principles favour'd *Atheism*. The zealous Gentleman took high offence: And we continu'd debating warmly, till late at night. But THEOCLES was Moderator: And we retir'd at last to our Repose, all calm and friendly. However, I was not a little rejoic'd to hear that our Companions were to go away early the next Morning, and leave THEOCLES to me alone.

FOR now (PALEMÓN!) that Morning was approaching, for which I so much long'd. What your Longing may prove,
 I

I may have reason to fear. You have had Sect. 5. enough, one wou'd think, to turn the edge of your Curiosity in this kind. Can it be imagin'd, that after the Recital of *Two* such Days already past, you can with patience hear of *Another* yet to come, more Philosophical than either? — But you have made me promise; and now, whate'er it cost, take it you must, as follows.

PART III.

PHILOCLES to PALEMON.

IT WAS yet deep Night (as I imagin'd) when I wak'd with the noise of People up in the House. I call'd to know the matter; and was told that THEOCLES had a little before parted with his Friends; after which he went out to take his Morning-Walk, but wou'd return (they thought) pretty soon: For so he had left word; and that no-body in the mean time shou'd disturb my Rest.

THIS was Disturbance sufficient, when I heard it. I presently got up; and finding it light enough to see the Hill, which was at a little distance from the House, I soon got thither; and, at the foot of it, overtook THEOCLES; to whom I complain'd of his Unkindness. For I was not certainly (I told him) so effeminate and weak a *Friend*, as to deserve that he shou'd
treat

treat me like a *Woman* : Nor had I shown Sect. I.
 such an Aversion to his Manners or Con-
 versation, as to be thought fitter for the
 dull Luxury of a soft Bed and Ease, than
 for Business, Recreation, or Study with an
 early Friend. He had no other way there-
 fore of making me amends, than by allow-
 ing me henceforward to be a Party with
 him in his *serious Thoughts*, as he saw I was
 resolv'd to be in his *Hours* and *Exercises* of
 this sort.

You have forgot then, said THEO-
 CLES, the Assignment you had yesterday
 with the *Silvan NYMPHS* at this Place
 and Hour?

No, truly, said I: For,
 as you see, I am come punctually to the
 Place appointed. But I never expected
 you shou'd have come hither without
 me.

Nay then, said THEOCLES,
 there's hope you may in time become a
 Lover with me: for you already begin to
 shew *Jealousy*. How little did I think
 these NYMPHS cou'd raise that Passion in
 you?

Truly, said I, for the *Nymphs*
 you mention, I know little of 'em as yet,
 My Jealousy and Love regard *You* only.
 I was afraid you had a mind to escape
 me. But now that I am again in posses-
 sion of you, I want no *Nymph* to make me
 happy here; unless it were perhaps to join
 Forces against you, in the manner your
 belov'd Poet makes the *Nymph* ÆGLE

Part 3. join with his two Youths, in forcing the
 ~~~~~ God SILENUS to sing to 'em.

I DARE trust your Gallantry, reply'd  
 THEOCLES, that if you had such fair  
 Company as you speak of, you wou'd  
 otherwise bestow your time than in an  
 Adventure of *Philosophy*.— But do you  
 expect I shou'd imitate the Poet's God  
 you mention'd, and sing " The Rise of  
 " Things from Atoms ; the Birth of Or-  
 " der from Confusion ; and the Origin of  
 " *Union, Harmony, and Concord*, from the  
 " sole Powers of CHAOS, and blind  
 " *Chance?*" The Song indeed was fitted  
 to the God. For what cou'd better sute  
 his jolly Character, than such a drunken  
 Creation ; which he lov'd often to cele-  
 brate, by acting it to the life ? But even  
 this Song was too harmonious for the  
 Night's Debauch. Well has our Poet  
 made it of the Morning, when the God  
 was fresh : For hardly shou'd we be  
 brought ever to believe that such harmo-  
 nious Numbers cou'd arise from a mere  
*Chaos* of the Mind. But we must hear  
 our Poet speaking in the Mouth of some  
 soberer *Demi-God* or *Hero*. He then pre-  
 sents us with a different Principle of  
 Things, and in a more proper Order of  
 Precedency, gives *Thought* the upper hand.  
 He makes MIND originally to have go-  
 vern'd *Body* ; not *Body Mind* : For this  
 had

had been a CHAOS everlasting, and must Sect. I.  
 have kept all things in a *Chaos-State* to  
 this day, and for ever, had it ever been.  
 But,

*The active MIND, infus'd thro all the  
 Space,*

*Unites and mingles with the mighty Mass:  
 Hence Men and Beasts.—*

HERE, PHILOCLES, we shall find  
 our *sovereign Genius*; if we can charm  
 the *Genius* of the Place (more chaste and  
 sober than your SILENUS) to inspire us  
 with a truer Song of Nature, teach us  
 some celestial Hymn, and make us feel  
*Divinity* present in these solemn Places of  
 Retreat.

HASTE then, I conjure you, said I,  
 good THEOCLES, and stop not one mo-  
 ment for any Ceremony or Rite. For  
 well I see, methinks, that without any  
 such Preparation, some *Divinity* has ap-  
 proach'd us, and already moves in you.  
 We are come to the sacred Groves of the  
*Hamadryads*, which formerly were said  
 to render Oracles. We are on the most  
 beautiful part of the Hill; and the Sun,  
 now ready to rise, draws off the Curtain  
 of Night, and shews us the open Scene  
 of Nature in the Plains below. Begin:  
 For now I know you are full of those Di-  
 vine

Part 3. vine Thoughts which meet you ever in  
 this *Solitude*. Give 'em but Voice and Ac-  
 cents: You may be still as much *alone* as  
 you are us'd, and take no more notice of  
 me than if I were absent.

JUST as I had said this, he turn'd  
 away his Eyes from me, musing a-while  
 by-himself; and soon afterwards, stretch-  
 ing out his Hand, as pointing to the Ob-  
 jects round him, he began.

*Medita-  
 tion.*

“ YE Fields and Woods, my Refuge  
 “ from the toilsome World of Business, re-  
 “ ceive me in your quiet Sanctuarys, and  
 “ favour my Retreat and thoughtful Soli-  
 “ tude. — Ye verdant Plains, how glad-  
 “ ly I salute ye! — Hail all ye blissful  
 “ Mansions! Known Seats! Delightful  
 “ Prospects! Majestick Beautys of this  
 “ Earth, and all ye Rural Powers and  
 “ Graces! — Bless'd be ye chaste Abodes  
 “ of happiest Mortals, who here in peace-  
 “ ful Innocence enjoy a Life unenvy'd,  
 “ tho Divine; whilst with its bless'd Tran-  
 “ quillity it affords a happy Leisure and  
 “ Retreat for Man; who, made for Con-  
 “ templation, and to search his own and  
 “ other Natures, may here best meditate  
 “ the Cause of Things; and plac'd amidst  
 “ the various Scenes of Nature, may nearer  
 “ view her Works.

“ O



" O GLORIOUS *Nature* ! supremely  
 " Fair, and sovereignly Good ! All-lov-  
 " ing and All-lovely, All-divine ! Whose  
 " Looks are so becoming, and of such  
 " infinite Grace ; whose Study brings  
 " such Wisdom, and whose Contempla-  
 " tion such Delight ; whose every single  
 " Work affords an ampler Scene, and is  
 " a nobler Spectacle than all which ever  
 " Art presented ! — O mighty *Nature* !  
 " Wise Substitute of *Providence* ! impow-  
 " er'd *Creatress* ! Or Thou empowering  
 " DEITY, Supreme Creator ! Thee I in-  
 " voke, and Thee alone adore. To thee  
 " this Solitude, this Place, these Rural  
 " Meditations are sacred ; whilst thus in-  
 " spir'd with Harmony of Thought, tho  
 " unconfin'd by Words, and in loose Num-  
 " bers, I sing of Nature's Order in crea-  
 " ted Beings, and celebrate the Beautys  
 " which resolve in Thee, the Source  
 " and Principle of all Beauty and Per-  
 " fection.

" THY Being is boundless, unsearch-  
 " able, impenetrable. In thy Immensity  
 " all Thought is lost ; Fancy gives o'er its  
 " Flight : and weary'd Imagination spends  
 " it-self in vain ; finding no Coast nor Li-  
 " mit of this Ocean, nor, in the widest  
 " Tract thro which it soars, one Point  
 " yet nearer the Circumference than the  
 " first

Part 3.

Medusa-  
tion.

“ first Center whence it parted.——Thus  
 “ having oft essay’d, thus sally’d forth in-  
 “ to the wide *Expanse*, when I return again  
 “ within *my-self*, struck with the Sense of  
 “ this so narrow Being, and of the Fullness  
 “ of that Immense-one; I dare no more  
 “ behold the amazing Depths, nor sound  
 “ the Abyss of DEITY.——

“ YET since by Thee (O *Sovereign*  
 “ MIND!) I have been form’d such as I  
 “ am, intelligent and rational; since the  
 “ peculiar Dignity of my Nature is to  
 “ know and contemplate Thee; permit  
 “ that with due freedom I exert those Fa-  
 “ cultys with which thou hast adorn’d  
 “ me. Bear with my ventrous and bold  
 “ Approach. And since nor vain Curiosi-  
 “ ty, nor fond Conceit, nor Love of ought  
 “ save Thee alone, inspires me with such  
 “ Thoughts as these, be thou my Assistant,  
 “ and guide me in this Pursuit; whilst I  
 “ venture thus to tread the Labyrinth of  
 “ wide Nature, and endeavour to trace  
 “ thee in thy Works.”——

HERE he stop’d short, and starting,  
 as out of a Dream; Now, PHILOCLES,  
 said he, inform me, How have I ap-  
 pear’d to you in my Fit? Seem’d it a  
 sensible kind of Madness, like those Trans-  
 ports

ports which are permitted to our *Poets*? Sect. i.  
or was it downright Raving?

I ONLY wish, said I, that you had been a little stronger in your Transport; to have proceeded as you began, without ever minding me. For I was beginning to see Wonders in that *Nature* you taught me, and was coming to know the Hand of your *divine Artificer*. But if you stop here, I shall lose the Enjoyment of the pleasing Vision. And already I begin to find a thousand Difficultys in fancying such a *Universal Genius* as you describe.

WHY, said he, is there any difficulty *Unity*, in fancying the Universe to be *One Intire Thing*? Can one otherwise think of it, by what is visible, than that All hangs together, as of a *Piece*? Grant it: And what follows? Only this; that if it may indeed be said of the World, "That it is simply *One*," there shou'd be something belonging to it which makes it *One*. As how? No otherwise than as you may observe in every thing. For to instance in what we see before us; I know you look upon the *Trees* of this vast Wood to be different from one another: And this tall *Oak*, the noblest of the Company, as it is by it-self a different thing from all its Fellows of the Wood, so with its own Wood of numerous spreading

Part 3. ing Branches (which seem *so many different*  
 TREES) 'tis still, I suppose, *one and the*  
*self-same* TREE. Now shou'd you, as a  
 mere Caviller, and not as a fair *Sceptick*,  
 tell me that if a Figure of Wax, or any o-  
 ther Matter, were cast in the exact Shape  
 and Colours of this Tree, and temper'd,  
 if possible, to the same kind of Substance,  
 it might therefore possibly be a *real Tree*  
 of the same Kind or Species; I wou'd  
 have done with you, and reason no longer.  
 But if you question'd me fairly, and de-  
 sir'd I shou'd satisfy you what I thought it  
 was which made this *Oneness* or *Sameness*  
 in the Tree or any other Plant; or by  
 what it differ'd from the waxen Figure,  
 or from any such Figure accidentally made,  
 either in the Clouds, or on the Sand by  
 the Sea-shore; I shou'd tell you, that nei-  
 ther the *Wax*, nor *Sand*, nor *Cloud* thus  
 piec'd together by our Hand or Fancy, had  
 any real relation within themselves, or had  
 any Nature by which they corresponded  
 any more in that near Situation of Parts,  
 than if scatter'd ever so far asunder. But  
 this I shou'd affirm, " That wherever  
 " there was such a *Sympathizing of Parts*,  
 " as we saw here, in our *real TREE*;  
 " Wherever there was such a plain Con-  
 " currence in *one common End*, and to the  
 " Support, Nourishment, and Propaga-  
 " tion of so fair a *Form*; we cou'd not be  
 " mistaken in saying there was a peculiar  
 " Nature

“ *Nature* belonging to this *Form*, and com-  
 “ mon to it with others of the same  
 “ kind.” By virtue of this, our Tree is  
 a real *Tree* ; lives, flourishes, and is still  
*One and the same* ; even when by Vegeta-  
 tion and Change of Substance, not one  
 Particle in it remains *the same*.

At this rate indeed, said I, you have  
 found a way to make very adorable Places  
 of these *Silvan* Habitations. For besides  
 the living *Genius* of each Place, the Woods  
 too, which, by your account, are anima-  
 ted, have their *Hamadryads*, no doubt,  
 and the Springs and Rivulets their *Nymphs*  
 in store belonging to 'em : And these too,  
 by what I can apprehend, of immaterial  
 and immortal Substances.

WE injure 'em then, reply'd THEO-  
 CLES, to say “ *they belong to these Trees* ;”  
 and not rather “ *these Trees to them*.”  
 But as for their *Immortality*, let them look  
 to it themselves. I only know that both  
*theirs* and all other *Natures* must for their  
 Duration depend alone on *that Nature* on  
 which the World depends : And that eve-  
 ry *Genius* else must be subordinate to that  
*One good GENIUS*, whom I wou'd wil-  
 lingly persuade you to think *belonging to*  
*this World*, according to our present way  
 of speaking.

LEAVING,

## Part 3.

*Personality.*

*Self.*

LEAVING, therefore, these Trees, continu'd he, to personate themselves the best they can, let us examine this thing of *Personality* between you and me; and consider how you, PHILOCLE'S, are *You*, and I'm *My-self*. For that there is a Sympathy of Parts in these Figures of ours, other than in those of *Marble* form'd by a PHIDIAS or PRAXITELES; Sense, I believe, will teach us. And yet that our own *Marble*, or *Stuff* (whate'er it be, of which we are compos'd) wears out in seven, or, at the longest, in twice seven Years, the meanest Anatomist can tell us. Now where, I beseech you, will that same *One* be found at last, supposing it to lie in the *Stuff* it-self, or any part of it? For when that is wholly spent, and not one Particle of it left, we are *Our-selves* still as much as before.

WHAT you Philosophers are, reply'd I, may be hard perhaps to determine: But for the rest of Mankind, I dare affirm, that few are so long themselves as half seven Years. 'Tis good fortune if a Man be *one and the same* only for a day or two. A Year makes more Revolutions than can be number'd.

TRUE, said he: But tho this may happen to a Man, and chiefly to one whose  
contrary

contrary Vices set him at odds so often Sect. I.  
 with himself; yet when he comes to suffer, or be punish'd for those Vices, he finds himself, if I mistake not, still *one and the same*. And you (PHILOCLES!) who, tho you disown Philosophy, are yet so true a Profelyte to *Pyrrhonism*; shou'd you at last, feeling the Power of the GENIUS I preach, be wrought upon to own the divine Hypothesis, and from this new *Identity*, Turn of Thought admit a total Change in all your Principles and Opinions; yet wou'd you be still the self-same PHILOCLES: tho better yet, if you will take my Judgment than the present-one, as much as I love and value him. You see therefore, there is a strange Simplicity in this YOU and ME, that in reality they shou'd be still *one and the same*, when neither *one* Atom of Body, *one* Passion, nor *one* Thought remains the same. And for that poor Endeavour of making out this *Sameness* or *Identity* of Being, from some self-same Matter, or Particle of Matter, *Matter*, suppos'd to remain with us when all besides is chang'd; this is by so much the more contemptible, as that *Matter* it-self is not really capable of such Simplicity. For I dare answer, you will allow this *You* and *Me* to be each of us simply and individually *One*, better than you can allow the same to any thing of mere Matter; unless quitting your Inclination for *Scepticism*,

Part 3. *critica*, you fall so in love with the Notion, of an *ATOM*, as to find it full as intelligible and certain to you, as that *You* are *YOUR-SELF*.

*Form.* BUT whatever, continu'd THEOCLES, he suppos'd of *uncompounded Matter* (a Thing, at best, pretty difficult to conceive) yet being compounded, and put together in a certain number of such Parts as unite and conspire in these Frames of ours, and others like them; if it can present us with so many innumerable Instances of particular Forms, who share this simple Principle, by which they are really *One*, *A Genius.* live, act, and have a *Nature* or *Genius* peculiar to themselves, and provident for their own Welfare; how shall we at the same time overlook this in *the Whole*, and deny the Great and General-ONE of the World? How can we be so unnatural as to disown divine Nature, our common Parent, and refuse to recognize *the universal* and *sovereign GENIUS*?

*The Supreme One.*

SOVEREIGNS, said I, require no Notice to be taken of 'em, when they pass *incognito*, nor no *Homage* where they appear not in *due Form*. We may even have reason to presume they shou'd be displeas'd with us for being too officious, in endeavouring to discover them, when they keep themselves either wholly invisible, or in



in very dark disguise. As for the *Notice* Sect. 1. we take of these *invisible Powers* in the common way of our Religion, we have our *visible* Sovereigns to answer for us. Our lawful Superiors teach us what we are to *own*, and to *perform*, in Worship. And we are dutiful in complying with them, and following their Example. But in a philosophical way, I find no warrant for our being such earnest Recognizers of a controverted Title. However it be, you must allow one at least to understand the Controversy, and know the Nature of these *Powers* describ'd. May one not inquire, "What *Substances* they are of? " whether *material* or *immaterial*?"

Substance;  
Material,  
Immaterial.

MAY one not, on the other hand, reply'd THEOCLES, inquire as well, "What *Substance*, or which of these two *Substances* you count your real and proper *SELF*." Or wou'd you rather be *no Substance*, but chuse to call your-self a *Mode* or *Accident*?

TRULY, said I, as accidental as my Life may be, or as that random Humour is, which governs it; I know nothing, after all, so *real* or *substantial* as MYSELF. Therefore if there be that Thing you call a *Substance*, I take for granted I am one. But for any thing further relating to this Question, you know my


Part 3. *Sceptick* Principles: I determine neither way.

ALLOW me then, reply'd he (good PHILOCLES!) the same Privilege of *Scepticism* in this respect; since it concerns not the Affair before us, Which way we determine, or Whether we come to any Determination at all in this point. For be the Difficulty ever so great; it stands the same, you may perceive, against *your own Being*, as against *that* which I am pretending to convince you of. You may raise what Objections you please on either hand; and your Dilemma may be of notable force against the manner of such a supreme Being's Existence. But after you have done all, you will bring the same Dilemma home to you, and be at a loss still about YOUR-SELF. When you have

argu'd ever so long upon these Metaphysical Points of *Mode* and *Substance*, and have philosophically concluded from the Difficultys of each Hypothesis, "That  
 " there cannot be in Nature such a *Universal-One* as This;" you must conclude, from the same Reasons, "That there  
 " cannot be any such *particular One* as  
 " Your-self." But that there is actually such a one as *this latter*, your own Mind, 'tis hop'd, may satisfy you. And of this *Mind* 'tis enough to say, "That it is some-  
 " thing which *acts* upon a Body, and has  
 " some-

*Metaphy-  
sicks.*

*A Mind.*

" something *passive* under it, and subject Sect. I.  
 " to it: That it has not only *Body* or mere   
 " *Matter* for its Subject, but in some re-  
 " spect even *it-self* too, and what pro-  
 " ceeds from it: That it superintends and  
 " manages its own *Imaginations, Appearan-*  
 " *ces, Fancys*; correcting, working, and  
 " modelling these, as it finds good; and  
 " adorning and accomplishing, the best it  
 " can, this composite Order of *Body* and  
 " *Understanding*." Such a MIND and  
 governing Part, I know there is somewhere  
 in the World. Let PYRRHO, by the  
 help of such another, contradict me, if he  
 pleases. We have our several Understand- *Particular*  
 ings and Thoughts, however we came by *Minds.*  
 'em. Each understands and thinks the  
 best he can for his own purpose: He  
 for *Himself*; I for another *Self*. And  
 who, I beseech you, for *the WHOLE*?  
 —No-one? Nothing at all?—The  
 World, perhaps, you suppose to be mere *Mind of*  
*Body*: A Mass of *modify'd Matter*. The *the Whole.*  
 Bodys of *Men* are part therefore of this  
*Body*. The *Imaginations, Sensations, Ap-*  
*prehensions* of *Men* are included in this  
*Body*, and inherent in it, produc'd out of  
 it, and resum'd again into it; tho' *the*  
*Body*, it seems, never dreams of it! The  
 WORLD *it-self* is never the wiser for all  
 the Wit and Wisdom it breeds! It has  
 no Apprehension at all of what is doing;  
 no Thought kept to *it-self*, for *its own*  
 Z 3 proper

Part 3. proper use, or purpose; not a single Imagination or Reflection, by which to discover or be conscious of the manifold Imaginations and Inventions which it sets a-foot, and deals abroad with such an open hand! The goodly Bulk so prolific, kind, and yielding for every-one else, has nothing left at last for its own share; having unhappily lavish'd all away! — By what Chance I wou'd fain understand. "How?

"or by what necessity? — Who gives the Law? — Who orders and distributes thus?" NATURE. Say you.

And what is Nature? Is ~~it~~ Sense? Is ~~it~~ a Person? Has ~~she~~ Reason or Understanding? No.

Who then understands for her, or is interested or concern'd in her behalf? No-one; not a Soul:

But *Every one for himself.*

Come on then. Let us hear further, Is not this *Nature* still a SELF? Or, tell me, I beseech you, How are You *one*? By what *Token*? or by virtue of *What*?

"By a Principle which joins certain Parts, and which thinks and acts constantly for the Use and Purpose of those Parts."

Say, therefore, What is your whole System a Part of? Or is it, indeed, no *Part*, but a *Whole*, by it-self, absolute, independent, and unrelated to any thing besides? If it be indeed a *Part*, and really *related*; to what else, I

beseech

beseech you, than to the *Whole* of Na-  
 TURE? Is there then such a *uniting Prin-*  
*ciple* in NATURE? If so, how are you  
 then a *Self*, and *Nature* not so? How  
 have you something to understand and act  
 for you, and NATURE, who gave this  
 Understanding, nothing at all to under-  
 stand for her, advise her, or help her out  
 (poor Being!) on any occasion, whatever  
 Necessity she may be in? Has the WORLD  
 such ill fortune in the main? Are there so  
 many particular understanding active Prin-  
 ciples every where? And is there No-  
 thing, at last, which thinks, acts, or un-  
 derstands for *All*? Nothing which admi-  
 nisters or looks after *All*?

*Nature,  
subject to  
a Mind.*

*Contrary  
Belief.*

No (says one of a modern Hypothesis)  
 for the WORLD was from Eternity, as  
 you see it; and is no more than barely  
 what you see: "*Matter modified; and in  
 motion; with here and there a thought,*  
*or a scattered Portion of dissipated Intelli-*  
*gence."*—No (says one of an antient  
 Hypothesis) For the World was once  
 without any Intelligence or Thought at  
 all; "*Mere Matter, Chaos, and a Play of Two sorts,*  
*atoms; and Thought, by chance, came*  
*into play, and made up a Harborty*  
*which was never design'd, or thought*  
*of."*—Admirable Conceits!—Believe  
 it who can. For my own share (thank  
 Providence) I have a Mind in my  
 possession,

*Faith of  
Atheism.*

Part 3. possession, which serves, such as it is, to keep my Body and its Affections, my Passions, Appetites, Imaginations, Fancys, and the rest, in tolerable *Harmony* and *Order*. But *the Order of the UNIVERSE*, I am persuaded still, is much the better of the two. Let EPICURUS, if he please, think his *the better*; and believing no *Genius* or *Wisdom* above his own, inform us by what Chance 'twas dealt him, and how *Atoms* came to be so wise.

Faith of  
Theism.

IN fine, continu'd THEOCLES (raising his Voice and Action) being thus, even by *Scepticism* it-self, convinc'd the more still of my own Being, and of this *Self* of mine, "That 'tis a *real Self*, drawn out, and copy'd from another principal and *original SELF* (the *Great-one* of the World)" I endeavour to be really *one* with it, and conformable to it, as far as I am able. I consider, That as there is *one* general Mass, *one* Body of the Whole; so to this Body there is an *Order*, to this *Order* a MIND: That to this *general MIND* each *particular-one* must have relation; as being of like Substance (as much as we can understand of *Substance*) alike active upon Body, original to Motion and Order; alike simple, uncompounded, individual; of like Energy, Effect, and Operation; and more like still; if it co-operates with it to general Good, and strives to *will* according

according to the best of *Wills*. So that Sect. 1.  
 it cannot surely but seem natural, “ That  
 “ the *particular* MIND shou’d seek its  
 “ Happiness in conformity with the *gene-*  
 “ *ral-one*, and endeavour to resemble it  
 “ in its highest Simplicity and Excel-  
 “ lence.”

THEREFORE, Now, said I, good  
 THEOCLES, be once against the *Enthu-*  
*siast*; and let me hear a-new that divine  
 Song with which I was lately charm’d. I  
 am already got over my Qualm, and begin  
 better than ever to fancy such a *Nature* as  
 you speak of; insomuch that I find my-  
 self mightily in its Interest, and concern’d  
 that all shou’d go happily and well with  
 it. Tho at the rate it often runs, I can  
 scarce help being in some pain on its ac-  
 count.

FEAR not, my Friend, reply’d he. For *Energy of*  
 know that every *particular* NATURE *Nature.*  
 certainly and constantly produces what is  
 good to it self; unless something *foreign*  
 disturbs or hinders it, either by over-  
 powering and corrupting it *within*, or by  
 Violence *from without*. Thus *Nature* in  
 the Patient struggles to the last, and strives  
 to throw off the Distemper. Thus even  
 in these Plants we see round us, every  
*par-*

Part 3. *particular* NATURE thrives, and attains its Perfection, if nothing from *without* obstructs it, nor any thing *foreign* has already impair'd or wounded it: And even in this case, it does its utmost skill to redeem it-self. What are all Weaknesses, Distortions, Sicknesses, imperfect Births, and the seeming Contradictions and Perversitys of Nature, other than of this sort? And how ignorant must one be of all natural Causes and Operations, to think that any of these Disorders happen by a Miscarriage of the *particular Nature*, and not by the Force of *some foreign Nature* which over-powers it? If therefore every *particular Nature* be thus constantly and unerringly *true* to it-self, and certain to produce only what is good for it-self, and conducing to its own right State; shall not the *general one*, *The NATURE of the Whole*, do full as much? Shall *That* alone miscarry or fail? Or is there any thing *foreign* which shou'd at any time do violence upon it, or force it out of its natural way? If not, then all it produces is to its own advantage and good; the *Good of All* in general: And what is for the good of all in general, is *Just and Good*.

*Distempers.*

*General Good.*

'Tis so, said I, I confess.

THEN you ought to rest satisfy'd, reply'd he; and not only so, but be pleas'd and  
and



and rejoice at what happens, knowing *Sec. 1.*  
*whence it comes, and to what Perfection it*  
 contributes.

*Resigna-  
 tion.*

BLESS me! said I, THEOCLES, in-  
 to what a Superstition are you like to lead  
 me! I thought it heretofore the Mark of  
 a superstitious Mind, to search for Provi-  
 dence in the common Accidents of Life,  
 and ascribe to the Divine Power those  
 common Disasters and Calamitys which  
 Nature has entail'd on Mankind. But  
 now, I find, I must place all in general  
 to one Account; and viewing things thro  
 a kind of Magical Glass, I am to see the  
 worst of *Ills* transform'd to *Good*, and ad-  
 mire equally whatever comes from one  
 and the same perfect Hand. — But no  
 matter; I can surmount all. Go on,  
 THEOCLES, and let me advise you in  
 my own behalf, that since you have re-  
 kindled me, you do not by delaying give  
 me time to cool again.

I wou'd have you know, reply'd he,  
 I scorn to take the advantage of a warm  
 Fit, and be beholden to Temper or Imagi-  
 nation for gaining me your Assent.  
 Therefore e'er I go yet a step farther, I  
 am resolv'd to enter again into cool Rea-  
 son with you, and ask, If you admit for  
 Proof what I advanc'd yesterday upon  
 that

Part 3. that head, "Of a *Universal UNION*,  
 ~~~~~ "Coherence, or Sympathizing of Things?"

*Principle
of Order,*

By Force of Probability, said I, you overcame me. Being convinc'd of a Consent and Correspondence in *all* we saw of Things, I consider'd it as *unreasonable* not to allow the same *throughout*!

*Why uni-
versal.*

UNREASONABLE indeed! reply'd he. For in the infinite *Residue*, were there no Principle of Union; it wou'd seem next to impossible, that things within our Sphere shou'd be consistent, and keep their Order. "For what was infinite, wou'd be predominant."
 It seems so.

TELL me then, said he, after this *Union* own'd; how you can refuse to allow the name of Demonstration to the remaining Arguments; which establish the Government of a perfect Mind.

*Phenome-
na of Ill.*

YOUR Solutions, said I, of the *ill Appearances* are not perfect enough to pass for Demonstration. And whatever seems, vicious or imperfect in the Creation, puts a stop to further Conclusions, till the thing be solv'd.

DID you not then, said he, agree with me, when I aver'd that the *Appearances* must

must of necessity stand as they are, and things seem altogether as imperfect, even on the Concession of a perfect Supreme Mind existent?

I did so.

AND is not the same Reason good still? viz. "That in an Infinity of Things, mutually relative, a Mind which sees not infinitely, can see nothing fully; and must therefore frequently see that as imperfect, which in it-self is really perfect." The Reason is still good.

ARE the *Appearances*, then, any Objection to our Hypothesis?

None, whilst they remain *Appearances* only.

CAN you then prove them to be any more? For if you cannot, you prove nothing. And that it lies on you to prove, you plainly see: since the *Appearances* do not only agree with the Hypothesis, but are a necessary Consequence from it. To bid me prove, therefore, in this case, is, in a manner, the same as to bid me be infinite. For nothing beside what is infinite can see infinite Connexions.

THE Presumption, I must confess, said I, by this reckoning, is wholly on your side. Yet still this is only *Presumption*.

TAKE

Part 3.

Demonstration.

TAKE *Demonstration* then, said he, if you can endure I shou'd reason thus abstractedly and drily. The *Appearances* of ILL, you say, are not necessarily that ILL they represent to us.

I own it.

THEREFORE what they represent may possibly be GOOD.

It may.

AND therefore there may possibly be no *real* ILL in things: but all may be perfectly concurrent to one Interest; the Interest of that Universal ONE.

It may be so.

WHY, then, if it may be so (be not surpriz'd) "It follows that it must be so;" on the account of that great Unit, and simple *Self-Principle* which you have granted in the WHOLE. For whatever is possible in the *Whole*, the Nature or Mind of the *Whole* will put in execution for the *Whole's Good*: And if it be possible to exclude ILL, it will exclude it. Therefore since notwithstanding the *Appearances*, 'tis possible that ILL may actually be excluded; count upon it, "That actually it is excluded." For nothing merely *passive* can oppose this universally *active* Principle. If any thing
active

active oppose it, 'tis another Principle. Sect. I.
 Allow it.

Mani-
 chæism,

'TIS impossible. For were there in Nature *Two* or more Principles, either they must agree, or not. If they agree not, all must be Confusion; till one be predominant. If they agree, there must be some natural Reason for their Agreement; and this natural Reason cannot be from *Chance*, but from some particular *Design, Contrivance, or Thought*: which brings us up again to *ONE* Principle, and makes the other *two* to be subordinate. And thus when we have compar'd each of the *Three* Opinions, *viz.* "That there ^{Consistent}
 " is no designing active Principle; That ^{is not}
 " there is more than one;" or, "That finally there is but *ONE*;" we shall perceive, that the only consistent Opinion is the last. And since *one* or *other* of these Opinions must of necessity be true; what can we determine, other than that the last is, and must be so, demonstrably? If it be Demonstration, "That in *Three* Opinions, *One* of which must necessarily be true, *Two* being plainly absurd, the *Third* must be the Truth."

ENOUGH, said I, THEOCLES. My Doubts are vanish'd. MALICE and CHANCE (vain *Phantoms*!) have yielded to that all-prevalent WISDOM which you have

Part 3. have establish'd. You are Conqueror in the cool way of *Reason*, and may with Honour now grow warm again, in your *poetick* Vein. Return therefore, I intreat you, once more, to that *Perfection of Being*; and address your-self to it as before, on our Approaches to these Silvan Scenes, where first it seem'd to inspire you. I shall now no longer be in danger of imagining either *Magick* or *Superstition* in the case; since you invoke no other POWER than that single ONE, which seems so natural.

Meditation.

THUS I continue then, said THEOCLES, addressing my-self, as you wou'd have me, to that *Guardian-DEITY* and *Inspirer*, whom we are to imagine present here; but not *here* only. For, " O mighty GENIUS! Sole-animating and inspiring Power! Author and Subject of these Thoughts! Thy Influence is universal: and in all Things, thou art inmost. From Thee depend their secret Springs of Action. Thou mov'st them with an irresistible unweary'd Force, by sacred and inviolable *Laws*, fram'd for the Good of each particular Being; as best may sute with the Perfection, Life, and Vigour of *the Whole*. The vital Principle is widely shar'd, and infinitely vary'd: dispers'd throughout; nowhere

" where extinct. All lives ; and by Suc- Sect. 1.
 " cession still revives. The temporary
 " Beings quit their borrow'd Forms; and
 " yield their elementary Substance to
 " New-Comers. Call'd, in their several
 " turns, to Life, they view the Light,
 " and viewing pass ; that others too may
 " be Spectators of the goodly Scene, and
 " greater numbers still enjoy the Privilege
 " of NATURE. Munificent and Great,
 " she imparts her-self to most ; and makes
 " the Subjects of her Bounty infinite.
 " Nought stays her halting Hand. No
 " Time nor Substance is lost or un-im-
 " prov'd. New Forms arise : and when
 " the old dissolve, the Matter whence
 " they were compos'd is not left useless,
 " but wrought with equal Management
 " and Art, even in *Corruption*, Nature's
 " seeming Waste, and vile Abhorrence.
 " The subject State appears merely as *the*
 " *Way or Passage* to some better. But
 " could we nearly view it, and with In-
 " difference, remote from the Antipathy
 " of Sense ; we then perhaps shou'd highest
 " raise our Admiration : convinc'd that
 " even *the Way it-self* was equal to *the*
 " *End*. Nor can we judg less favorably
 " of that consummate Art exhibited thro
 " all the Works of Nature ; since our
 " weak Eyes, help'd by mechanick Art,
 " discover in these Works, a hidden Scene
 " of Wonders ; Worlds within Worlds,
 " Vol. 2. A a " of

Part 3.

Meditation,

“ of infinite Minuteness, tho as to Art
 “ still equal to the greatest, and pregnant
 “ with more Wonders than the most discerning Sense, join'd with the greatest
 “ Art, or the acutest Reason, can penetrate or unfold.

“ BUT 'tis in vain for us to search the
 “ bulky Mass of MATTER; seeking to
 “ know its Nature; how great *the Whole*
 “ it-self, or even how small its *Parts*.

“ IF knowing only some of the Rules
 “ of MOTION, we seek to trace it further, 'tis in vain we follow it into the
 “ Bodys it has reach'd. Our tardy Apprehensions fail us, and can reach nothing beyond the Body it-self, thro
 “ which it is diffus'd. Wonderful *Being*,
 “ (if we may call it so) which Bodys never receive, except from others: which
 “ lose it; nor ever lose, unless by imparting it to others. Even without Change
 “ of Place it has its Force: And Bodys
 “ big with Motion labour to move, yet
 “ stir not; whilst they express an Energy
 “ beyond our Comprehension.

“ IN vain too we pursue that *Phantom*
 “ TIME, too small, and yet too mighty
 “ for our Grasp; when shrinking to a
 “ narrow point, it escapes our Hold, or
 “ mocks our scanty Thought by swelling
 “ to

“ to Eternity an Object unproportion'd Sect. r.
 “ to our Capacity, as is thy Being, O thou
 “ Antient *Cause*! older than *Time*, yet
 “ young with fresh Eternity.

“ IN vain we try to fathom the Abyss
 “ of SPACE, the Seat of thy extensive
 “ Being; of which no Place is empty, no
 “ Void which is not full.

“ IN vain we labour to understand that
 “ Principle of SENSE and THOUGHT,
 “ which seeming in us to depend so
 “ much on *Motion*, yet differs so much
 “ from it, and from *Matter* it-self, as not
 “ to suffer us to conceive how Thought
 “ can more result from this, than this a-
 “ rise from Thought. But *Thought* we
 “ own pre-eminent, and confess the real-
 “ lest of Beings; the only Existence of
 “ which we are made sure of, by being con-
 “ scious. All else may be only Dream and
 “ Shadow. All which even *Sense* suggests
 “ may be deceitful. The SENSE *it-self*
 “ remains still; REASON subsists; and
 “ THOUGHT maintains its *Eldership* of
 “ Being. Thus are we in a manner con-
 “ scious of that *original* and *eternally ex-*
 “ *istent* THOUGHT, whence we derive
 “ *our own*. And thus the Assurance we
 “ have of the Existence of Beings above
 “ our Sense, and of THEE (the great
 “ Exemplar of thy Works) comes from

“ Thee, the ALL-TRUE, and Perfect,
 “ who hast thus communicated thy-self
 “ more immediately to us, so as in some
 “ manner *to inhabit* within our *Souls*;
 “ Thou who art *Original SOUL*, diffusive,
 “ vital in all, inspiriting *the Whole* !

“ ALL Nature’s Wonders serve to ex-
 “ cite and perfect this Idea of their *Au-*
 “ *thor*. ’Tis here he suffers us to see, and
 “ even converse with him, in a manner
 “ suitable to our Frailty. How glorious is
 “ it to contemplate him, in this noblest
 “ of his Works apparent to us, The *System*
 “ of *the bigger World* !”——

HERE I must own, ’twas no small
 Comfort to me, to find that, as our Me-
 ditation turn’d, we were likely to get clear
 of an entangling abstruse *Philosophy*. I was
 in hopes THEOCLES, as he proceeded,
 might stick closer to *Nature*, since he was
 now come upon the Borders of our World.
 And here I wou’d willingly have welcom’d
 him, had I thought it safe at present to
 venture the least Interruption.

“ BESIDES the neighbouring Planets
 (continu’d he, in his rapturous Strain)
 “ what Multitudes of *fix’d STARS* did
 “ we see sparkle, not an hour ago, in the
 “ clear Night, which yet had hardly
 “ yielded

“ yielded to the Day ? How many others Sect. I.
 “ are discover’d by the help of Art ? Yet
 “ how many remain still, beyond the reach
 “ of our Discovery ! Crouded as they
 “ seem, their Distance from each other is
 “ as unmeasurable by Art, as is the Dis-
 “ tance between them and us. Whence
 “ we are naturally taught the Immensity
 “ of that BEING, who thro these im-
 “ mense Spaces has dispos’d such an Infi-
 “ nite of Bodys, belonging each (as we
 “ may well presume) to Systems as com-
 “ plect as our own World : Since even the
 “ smallest Spark of this bright *Galaxy* may
 “ vie with this our SUN ; which shining
 “ now full out, gives us new Life, exalts
 “ our Spirits, and makes us feel DIVINI-
 “ TY more present.

“ PRODIGIOUS ORB ! Bright Source
 “ of vital Heat, and Spring of Day !——
 “ Soft Flame, yet how intense, how ac-
 “ tive ! How diffusive, and how vast a
 “ Substance ; yet how collected thus with-
 “ in it-self, and in a glowing Mass con-
 “ fin’d to the Center of this *planetary*
 “ World !——*Mighty* Being ! Brightest
 “ Image, and Representative of *the Al-*
 “ *mighty* ! Supreme of the corporeal
 “ World ! Unperishing in Grace, and of
 “ undecaying Youth ! Fair, beautiful,
 “ and hardly mortal Creature ! By what
 “ secret ways dost thou receive the Sup-

Part 3.

Meditation.

“ plys which maintain Thee still in such
 “ unweary'd Vigour, and un-exhausted
 “ Glory ; notwithstanding those eternal-
 “ ly emitted Streams, and that continual
 “ Expence of vital Treasures, which in-
 “ lighten and invigorate the surrounding
 “ Worlds ?—

“ AROUND him all the PLANETS,
 “ with this *our Earth*, single, or with At-
 “ tendants, continually move ; seeking to
 “ receive the Blessing of his Light, and
 “ lively Warmth ! Towards him they
 “ seem to tend with prone descent, as to
 “ their Center ; but happily controul'd
 “ still by another Impulse, they keep their
 “ heavenly Order ; and in just Numbers,
 “ and exactest Measure, go the eternal
 “ Rounds.

“ BUT, O thou who art the *Author*
 “ and *Modifier* of these various Motions !
 “ O *sovereign* and *sole Mover*, by whose
 “ high Art the rolling Spheres are go-
 “ vern'd, and these stupendous Bodys of
 “ our World hold their unrelenting Cour-
 “ ses ! O wise OEconomist, and power-
 “ ful Chief, whom all the Elements and
 “ Powers of Nature serve ! How hast
 “ thou animated these moving Worlds ?
 “ What Spirit or Soul infus'd ? What
 “ Bias fix'd ? Or how encompass'd them
 “ in liquid *Ether*, driving them as with
 “ the

“ the Breath of living Winds, thy active Sect. I.
 “ and unweary'd Ministers in this intri-
 “ cate and mighty Work ?

“ Thus powerfully are the *Systems* held
 “ intire, and kept from fatal interfering.
 “ Thus is our *ponderous* GLOBE directed
 “ in its annual Course ; daily revolving on
 “ its own Center : whilst the obsequious
 “ MOON with double Labour, monthly
 “ furrounding this our bigger Orb, attends
 “ the Motion of her Sister-Planet, and
 “ pays in common her circular Homage to
 “ the *Sun*.

“ YET is this *Mansion*-GLOBE, this
 “ *Man*-Container, of a much narrower
 “ compass even than other its Fellow-
 “ Wanderers of our System. How nar-
 “ row then must it appear, compar'd with
 “ the capacious *System* of its own *Sun* ?
 “ And how narrow, or as nothing, in re-
 “ spect of those *innumerable Systems* of o-
 “ ther apparent *Suns* ? Yet how immense
 “ a Body it seems, compar'd with ours
 “ of human Form, a borrow'd Remnant
 “ of its variable and oft-converted Sur-
 “ face ? tho animated with a sublime Ce-
 “ lestial Spirit, by which we have Rela-
 “ tion and Tendency to *Thee* our Heaven-
 “ ly *Sire*, Center of Souls ; to whom these
 “ Spirits of ours by Nature tend, as earth-
 “ ly Bodys to their proper Center.—

Part 3.



Meditation.

“ O did they tend as unerringly and constantly!——But *Thou* alone composest
 “ the Disorders of the corporeal World,
 “ and from the restless and fighting *Elements* raisest that peaceful Concord, and
 “ conspiring Beauty of the ever-flourishing Creation. Even so canst thou convert these jarring Motions of intelligent
 “ Beings, and in due time and manner
 “ cause them to find their Rest; making
 “ them contribute to the Good and Perfection of *the* UNIVERSE, thy *all-good*
 “ and *perfect Work*.”——

HERE again he broke off, looking on me as if he expected I should speak; which when he found plainly I would not, but continu'd still in a posture of musing Thought: Why PHILOCLES! (said he, with an Air of Wonder) What can this mean, that you should suffer me thus to run on, without the least Interruption? Have you at once given over your scrupulous Philosophy, to let me range thus at pleasure thro' these aerial Spaces and imaginary Regions, where my capricious Fancy or easy Faith has led me? I would have you to consider better, and know, my PHILOCLES, that I had never trusted myself with you in this *Vein* of *Enthusiasm*, had I not rely'd on you to govern it a little better.

I FIND then, said I (rouzing my-self from my musing Posture) you expect I shou'd serve you in the same capacity as that Musician, whom an antient Orator made use of at his Elbow, to strike such moving Notes as rais'd him when he was perceiv'd to sink ; and calm'd him again, when his impetuous Spirit was transported in too high a Strain.

You imagine right, reply'd THEOCLES; and therefore I am resolv'd not to go on, till you have promis'd to pull me by the Sleeve when I grow extravagant. Be it so, said I ; You have my Promise. But how if instead of rising in my Transports, I shoud grow flat and tiresom : What Lyre or Instrument wou'd you imploy to raise me ?

THE Danger, I told him, cou'd hardly be suppos'd to lie on this hand. His *Vein* was a plentiful one ; and his *Enthusiasm* in no likelihood of failing him. His Subject too, as well as his Numbers, wou'd bear him out. And with the Advantage of the rural Scene around us, his number'd Prose, I thought, supply'd the room of the best Pastoral Song. For in the manner I was now wrought up, 'twas as agreeable to me to hear him, in this kind of *Passion*, invoke his *Stars* and *Elements*, as
to

Part 3. *to hear one of those amorous Shepherds*
 complaining to his *Flock*, and making the
 Woods and Rocks resound the Name of
Her whom he ador'd.—Begin therefore
 (continu'd I, still pressing him) Begin a-
 new, and lead me boldly thro your *Ele-*
ments. Wherever there is danger, be it on
 either hand, I promise to give you warn-
 ing, when I perceive it.

Medita-
tion.

LET us begin then, said he, with this
 our *Element* of EARTH, which yonder
 we see cultivated with such Care by the
 early Swains now working in the Plain be-
 low.——“ Unhappy restless *Men*, who
 “ first disdain'd these peaceful Labours,
 “ gentle rural Tasks, perform'd with such
 “ Delight! What *Pride* or what *Ambition*
 “ bred this Scorn? Hence all those fatal
 “ Evils of your Race, Enormous *Luxu-*
 “ *ry*, despising homely Fare, ranges thro
 “ Seas and Lands, rifles the Globe; and
 “ Men ingenious to their Misery, work
 “ out for themselves the means of heavier
 “ Labour, anxious Cares, and Sorrow:
 “ Not satisfy'd to turn and manure for
 “ their Use the wholesom and beneficial
 “ Mould of this their EARTH, they
 “ dig yet deeper, and seeking out imagi-
 “ nary Wealth, they search its very En-
 “ trails.

“ HERE,

“ HERE, led by Curiosity, we find
 “ *Minerals* of different Natures, which
 “ by their Simplicity discover no less of
 “ the Divine Art, than the most com-
 “ pounded of Nature’s Works. Some are
 “ found capable of surprizing Changes;
 “ others as durable, and hard to be de-
 “ stroy’d or chang’d by Fire, or utmost
 “ Art. So various are the Subjects of
 “ our Contemplation, that even the Study
 “ of these inglorious Parts of Nature, in
 “ the nether World, is able it-self alone
 “ to yield large Matter and Employment
 “ for the busiest Spirits of Men, who in
 “ the Labour of these Experiments can
 “ willingly consume their Lives.—But
 “ the noisom poisonous Steams which
 “ the *Earth* breathes from these dark Ca-
 “ verns, where she conceals her Trea-
 “ sures; suffer not prying Mortals to live
 “ long in this Search.

“ How comfortable is it to those who
 “ come out hence alive, to breathe a pu-
 “ rer AIR! to see the rejoicing Light of
 “ *Day!* and tread the fertile Ground!
 “ How gladly they contemplate the Sur-
 “ face of the Earth, their Habitation,
 “ heated and enliven’d by the *Sun*, and
 “ temper’d by the fresh AIR of fanning
 “ *Breezes!* These exercise the resty Plants,
 “ and scour the unactive Globe. And
 “ when

Part 3.

Medusa-
sion.

“ when the *Sun* draws hence thick clou-
 “ ded Steams and Vapours, ’tis only to di-
 “ gest and exalt the unwholesom Particles,
 “ and commit ’em to the sprightly AIR;
 “ which soon imparting its quick and vi-
 “ tal Spirit, renders ’em again with im-
 “ provement to the Earth, in gentle
 “ Breathings, or in rich Dews and fruit-
 “ ful Showers. The same AIR, moving
 “ about the mighty Mass, enters its Pores,
 “ impregnating the Whole: And both the
 “ *Sun* and AIR conspiring, so animate
 “ this *Mother-Earth*, that tho ever breed-
 “ ing, her Vigour is as great, her Beauty
 “ as fresh, and her Looks as charming, as
 “ if she newly came out of the forming
 “ Hands of her Creator.

“ How beautiful is the WATER a-
 “ mong the inferior Earthly Works!
 “ Heavy, liquid, and transparent: with-
 “ out the springing Vigour and expansive
 “ Force of *Air*; but not without Activi-
 “ ty. Stubborn and un-yielding, when
 “ compress’d; but placidly avoiding Force,
 “ and bending every way with ready Flu-
 “ ency! Insinuating, it dissolves the lum-
 “ pish Earth, frees the intangled Bodys,
 “ procures their Intercourse, and summons
 “ to the Field the keen terrestrial Parti-
 “ cles; whose happy Strifes soon ending
 “ in strict Union, produce the various
 “ Forms which we behold. How vast
 “ are

“ are the Abyſſes of the *Sea*, where this *Seet. i.*
 “ ſoft Element is ſtor’d; and whence the
 “ Sun and Winds extracting, raiſe it in-
 “ to Clouds! Theſe ſoon converted in-
 “ to Rain, water the thirſty Ground,
 “ and ſupply a-freſh the Springs and Ri-
 “ vers; the Comfort of the neighbouring
 “ Plains, and ſweet Refreshment of all
 “ Animals.

“ BUT whither ſhall we trace the
 “ Sources of *the* LIGHT? or in what
 “ Ocean comprehend the luminous Mat-
 “ ter ſo wide diffuſ’d thro the immense
 “ Spaces which it fills? What Seats ſhall
 “ we aſſign to that fierce Element of FIRE,
 “ too active to be confin’d within the
 “ Compaſs of the *Sun*, and not excluded
 “ even the Bowels of the heavy *Earth*?
 “ The *Air* it-ſelf ſubmits to it, and ſerves
 “ as its inferior Inſtrument. Even this
 “ our *Sun*, with all thoſe numerous *Suns*,
 “ the glittering Hoſt of Heaven, ſeem to
 “ receive from hence the vaſt Supply
 “ which keep them ever in their ſplendid
 “ State. The *inviſible ethereal Subſtance*,
 “ penetrating both liquid and ſolid Bodys,
 “ is diffuſ’d throughout the Univerſe.
 “ It cheriſhes the cold dull maſſy *Globe*,
 “ and warms it to its Center. It forms
 “ the Minerals; gives Life and Growth
 “ to Vegetables; kindles a ſoft, inviſible,
 “ and vital *Flame* in the Breasts of living
 “ Creatures;

Part 3.

“ Creatures ; frames, animates, and nurses
 “ all the various Forms ; sparing, as well
 “ as employing for their Use, those *sulphu-*
 “ *rous* and *combustible* Matters of which
 “ they are compos’d. Benign and gentle
 “ amidst all, it still maintains this happy
 “ Peace and Concord, according to its
 “ stated and peculiar Laws. But these
 “ once broken, the acquitted *Being* takes
 “ its Course unrul’d. It runs impetuous
 “ thro the fatal Breach, and breaking into
 “ visible and fierce *Flames*, passes trium-
 “ phant o’er the yielding Forms, convert-
 “ ting all into it-self, and dissolving now
 “ those Systems, which it-self before had
 “ form’d. ’Tis thus” —

HERE THEOCLES stopt on a sud-
 den, when (as he imagin’d) I was put-
 ting my Hand out, to lay hold on his
 Sleeve.

O PHILOCLES, said he, ’tis well re-
 member’d. I was growing too warm, I
 find ; as well I might indeed, in this *hot*
Element. And here perhaps I might have
 talk’d yet more mysteriously, had you
 been one who cou’d think otherwise than
 in the common way of the soft *Flames* of
Love. You might, perhaps, have heard
 Wonders in this kind : “ How all things
 “ had their *Being* hence, and How their
 “ noblest

" noblest End was to be *here* wrapt up, Sect. 1.
 " consum'd and lost." — But in these high Flights, I might possibly have gone near to burn my Wings.

INDEED, said I, you might well expect the Fate of ICARUS, for your high-flying. But this, indeed, was not what I fear'd. For you were got above Danger; and, with that devouring Element on your side, had master'd not only the *Sun* himself, but every thing which stood in your way. I was afraid it might, in the issue, run to what they tell us of a *universal Conflagration*; in which I knew not how it might go, possibly, with our GENIUS.

I AM glad, said he, PHILOCLES! to find this grown such a Concern with you. But you may rest secure here, if the Case you meant were that *periodical Conflagration* talk'd of by some *Philosophers*. For there the GENIUS wou'd of Necessity be *all in all*: And in those Intervals of Creation, when no Form, nor Species existed any-where out of the *Divine Mind*, all then was DEITY: All was that ONE, collected thus within it-self, and subsisting (as they imagin'd) rather in a more simple and perfect manner, than when multiply'd in more ways; and becoming productive,

Part 3. ductive, it unfolded it-self in the various
 Map of *Nature*, and this *fair visible World*.

BUT for my part, said I (interrupting him) who can much better see DIVINITY *unfolded*, than in that *involv'd* and *solitary* State before Creation; I cou'd wish you wou'd go a little further with me in the Map of *Nature*; especially if descending from your lofty Flights, you wou'd be content to pitch upon this humble Spot of EARTH; where I cou'd better accompany you, where-e'er you led me.

BUT you, reply'd he, who wou'd confine me to this heavy *Earth*, must yet allow me the same Wings of Fancy. How else shall I fly with you, thro different Climates, from Pole to Pole, and from the Frigid to the Torrid Zone?

O, SAID I, for this purpose I will allow you the PEGASUS of the Poets, or that wing'd *Griffin* which an *Italian* Poet of the Moderns gave to one of his Heroes: Yet on this condition, that you take no such extravagant Flight, as his was, to the *Moon*; but keep closely to this Orb of *Earth*.

SINCE you will have it so, reply'd THEOCLES, let us try first on the darkest
 and

and most imperfect Parts of our Map, Sect. I.
and see how you can indure the Prospect.

“ How oblique and faintly
“ looks the Sun on yonder Climates, far
“ remov’d from him! How tedious are
“ the *Winters* there! How deep the Hor-
“ rors of the Night, and how uncom-
“ fortable even the Light of Day! The
“ freezing Winds employ their fiercest
“ Breath, yet are not spent with blowing.
“ The Sea, which elsewhere is scarce con-
“ fin’d within its Limits, lies here im-
“ mur’d in Walls of Chrystal. The Snow
“ covers the Hills, and almost fills the
“ lowest Valleys. How wide and deep
“ it lies, incumbent o’er the Plains, hiding
“ the sluggish Rivers, the Shrubs, and
“ Trees, the Dens of Beasts, and Man-
“ sions of distress’d and feeble Men! —
“ See! where they lie confin’d, hardly
“ secure against the raging Cold, or the
“ Attacks of the wild Beasts, now Mas-
“ ters of the wasted Field, and forc’d by
“ Hunger out of the naked Woods. —
“ Yet not dishearten’d (such is the Force
“ of human Breasts) but thus provided
“ for, by Art and Prudence, the kind
“ compensating Gifts of Heaven, Men
“ and their Herds may wait for a Re-
“ lease. For at length the Sun approach-
“ ing, melts the Snow, sets longing Men
“ at liberty, and affords them Means and
“ Time to make provision against the

Part 3.

Meditation.

“ next Return of Cold. It breaks the
 “ icy Fetters of the Main ; where vast
 “ Sea-Monsters pierce thro floating Islands,
 “ with Arms which can withstand the
 “ Chrystal Rock : whilst others, who of
 “ themselves seem great as Islands, are by
 “ their Bulk alone arm’d against all but
 “ Man ; whose Superiority over Crea-
 “ tures of such stupendous Size and Force,
 “ shou’d make him mindful of his Privi-
 “ lege of Reason, and force him humbly
 “ to adore the great Composer of these
 “ wondrous Frames, and Author of his
 “ own superior Wisdom.

“ BUT leaving these dull Climates, so
 “ little favor’d by the Sun, for those hap-
 “ pier Regions, on which he looks more
 “ kindly, making perpetual *Summer* ; How
 “ great an Alteration do we find ? His
 “ purer *Light* confounds weak-sighted
 “ Mortals, pierc’d by his scorching *Beams*.
 “ Scarce can they tread the glowing
 “ Ground. The Air they breathe can-
 “ not enough abate the *Fire* which burns
 “ within their panting Breasts. Their
 “ Bodys melt. O’ercome and fainting,
 “ they seek the Shade, and wait the cool
 “ Refreshments of the Night. Yet oft
 “ the *bounteous* CREATOR bestows other
 “ Refreshments. He casts a veil of *Clouds*
 “ before ’em, and raises gentle *Gales* ; fa-
 “ vor’d by which, the Men and Beasts
 “ pursue

“ pursue their Labours; and Plants re- Sect. 1.
 “ fresh’d by Dews and Showers, can glad- ~~~~~
 “ ly bear the warmest Sun-beams.

“ AND here the varying Scene opens
 “ to new Wonders. We see a Country
 “ rich with *Gems*, but richer with the
 “ fragrant *Spices* it affords. How gravely
 “ move the largest of *Land-Creatures* on
 “ the Banks of this fair River! How
 “ ponderous are their Arms, and vast
 “ their Strength, with Courage, and a
 “ Sense superior to the other Beasts!
 “ Yet are they tam’d (we see) by Man-
 “ kind, and brought even to fight their
 “ Battels, rather as Allys and Confede-
 “ rates, than as Slaves. — But let us turn
 “ our Eyes towards these smaller, and
 “ more curious Objects; the numerous
 “ and devouring *Insects* on the Trees in
 “ these wide Plains. How shining, strong,
 “ and lasting are the subtile Threds spun
 “ from their artful Mouths! Who, beside
 “ *The All-wise*, has taught ’em to compose
 “ the beautiful soft Shells, in which re-
 “ cluse and bury’d, yet still alive, they
 “ undergo such a surprizing Change;
 “ when not destroy’d by Men, who
 “ clothe and adorn themselves with the
 “ Labours and Lives of these weak Crea-
 “ tures, and are proud of wearing such in-
 “ glorious Spoils? How sumptuously ap-
 “ parel’d, gay, and splendid, are all the va-

Part 3.

~
Medita-
tion.

“ rious *Insects* which feed on the other
 “ Plants of this warm Region! How
 “ beautiful *the Plants* themselves in all
 “ their various Growths, from the trium-
 “ phant *Palm* down to the humble *Moss*!

“ Now may we see that *happy* Country
 “ where precious *Gums* and *Balsams* flow
 “ from Trees; and Nature yields her most
 “ delicious Fruits. How tame and trac-
 “ table, how patient of Labour and of
 “ Thirst, are those large Creatures; who
 “ lifting up their lofty Heads, go led and
 “ loaden thro these dry and barren Places!
 “ Their Shape and Temper shew them
 “ fram’d by Nature to submit to Man,
 “ and fitted for his Service: who from
 “ hence ought to be more sensible of his
 “ Wants, and of the Divine Bounty, thus
 “ supplying them.

“ But see! not far from us, that *fer-*
 “ *tilest* of Lands, water’d and fed by a
 “ friendly generous Stream, which, e’er
 “ it enters the Sea, divides it-self into ma-
 “ ny Branches, to dispense more equally
 “ the rich and nitrous Manure, it bestows
 “ so kindly and in due time, on the ad-
 “ jacent Plains.—Fair Image of that
 “ fruitful and exuberant Nature, who
 “ with a Flood of Bounty blesses all
 “ things, and, Parent-like, out of her ma-
 “ ny Breasts sends the nutritious Draught
 “ in

“ in various Streams to her rejoicing Off-
 “ spring! — Innumerable are the dubious Sect. I.
 “ Forms and unknown Species which drink
 “ the slimy Current: whether they are
 “ such as leaving the scorch'd Desarts, fa-
 “ tiate here their ardent Thirst, and pro-
 “ miscuously engendring, beget a mon-
 “ strous Race; or whether (as 'tis said)
 “ by the Sun's genial Heat, active on the
 “ fermenting Ooze, new Forms are gene-
 “ rated, and issue from the River's fertile
 “ Bed. — See there the noted Tyrant
 “ of the Flood, and Terror of its Bor-
 “ ders! when suddenly displaying his hor-
 “ rid Form, the *amphibious* Ravager in-
 “ vades the Land, quitting his watry Den,
 “ and from the deep emerging, with hi-
 “ deous rush, sweeps o'er the trembling
 “ Plain. The Natives from afar behold
 “ with wonder the enormous Bulk, sprung
 “ from so small an Egg. With Horror
 “ they relate the Monster's Nature, cruel
 “ and deceitful: how he with dire Hypo-
 “ crisy, and false Tears, beguiles the Sim-
 “ ple-hearted; and inspiring Tenderness
 “ and kind Compassion, kills with pious
 “ Fraud. — Sad Emblem of that spiritual
 “ Plague, dire *Superstition*! Native of this
 “ Soil; where first * Religion grew unfo-
 “ ciable, and among different Worshippers
 “ bred mutual Hatred, and Abhorrence of

* VOL. III. pag. 59, 60, &c.

Part 3.

 Meditation.

“ each others Temples. The Infection
 “ spreads : and Nations now profane one
 “ to another, war fiercer, and in Religion’s
 “ Cause forget Humanity : whilst savage
 “ Zeal, with meek and pious Semblance,
 “ works dreadful Massacre ; and for Hea-
 “ ven’s sake (horrid Pretence !) makes
 “ desolate the Earth.—

“ HERE let us leave these Monsters
 “ (glad if we cou’d here confine ’em !)
 “ and detesting the dire prolifick Soil, fly
 “ to the vast *Desarts* of these Parts. All
 “ ghastly and hideous as they appear, they
 “ want not their peculiar Beautys. The
 “ Wildness pleases. We seem to live alone
 “ with Nature. We view her in her in-
 “ most Recesses, and contemplate her
 “ with more Delight in these original
 “ Wilds, than in the artificial Labyrinths
 “ and feign’d Wildernesses of the Palace.
 “ The Objects of the place, the scaly Ser-
 “ pents, the savage Beasts, and poisonous
 “ Insects, how terrible soever, or how
 “ contrary to human Nature, are beauteous
 “ in themselves, and fit to raise our
 “ Thoughts in Admiration of that *Divine*
 “ *Wisdom*, so far superior to our short
 “ Views. Unable to declare the Use or
 “ Service of all things in this Universe,
 “ we are yet assur’d of the Perfection of
 “ *all*, and of the Justice of that *OEconomy*,
 “ to which all things are subservient, and
 “ in

“ in respect of which, Things seemingly Sect. I.
 “ deform’d are amiable ; Disorder becomes
 “ regular ; Corruption wholesom ; and
 “ Poisons (such as these we have seen)
 “ prove healing and beneficial.

“ BUT behold ! thro a vast Tract of
 “ Sky before us, the mighty ATLAS rears
 “ his lofty Head, cover’d with Snow, a-
 “ bove the Clouds. Beneath the *Moun-*
 “ *tain’s* foot, the rocky Country rises into
 “ Hills, a proper Basis of the ponderous
 “ Mass above : where huge embody’d
 “ Rocks lie pil’d on one another, and
 “ seem to prop the high Arch of Heaven.
 “ — See ! with what trembling Steps
 “ poor Mankind tread the narrow Brink
 “ of the deep Precipices ! From whence
 “ with giddy Horror they look down,
 “ mistrusting even the Ground which bears
 “ ’em ; whilst they hear the hollow Sound
 “ of Torrents underneath, and see the
 “ Ruin of the impending Rock ; with fal-
 “ ling Trees which hang with their Roots
 “ upwards, and seem to draw more Ruin
 “ after ’em. Here thoughtless Men, seiz’d
 “ with the Newness of such Objects, be-
 “ come thoughtful, and willingly con-
 “ template the incessant Changes of this
 “ Earth’s Surface. They see, as in one
 “ instant, the Revolutions of past Ages,
 “ the fleeting Forms of Things, and the
 “ Decay even of this our *Globe* ; whose

Part 3.

Meditation.

“ Youth and first Formation they con-
 “ sider, whilst the apparent Spoil and irre-
 “ parable Breaches of the wasted Moun-
 “ tain shew them the World it-self only
 “ as a noble Ruin, and make them think
 “ of its approaching Period.—But here
 “ mid-way the *Mountain*, a spacious Bor-
 “ der of thick Wood harbours our wea-
 “ ry’d Travellers: who now are come
 “ among the ever-green and lofty Pines;
 “ the Firs, and noble Cedars, whose
 “ towering Heads seem endless in the
 “ Sky; the rest of Trees appearing only
 “ as Shrubs beside them. And here a dif-
 “ ferent Horror seizes our shelter’d Tra-
 “ vellers, when they see the Day dimi-
 “ nish’d by the deep Shades of the vast
 “ Wood; which closing thick above,
 “ spreads Darkness and eternal Night be-
 “ low. The faint and gloomy Light
 “ looks horrid as the Shade it-self: and
 “ the profound Stillness of these Places
 “ imposes Silence upon Men; struck with
 “ the hoarse Echoings of every Sound
 “ within the spacious Caverns of the
 “ Wood. Here *Space* astonishes. *Silence*
 “ it-self seems pregnant; whilst an un-
 “ known Force works on the Mind, and
 “ dubious Objects move the wakeful Sense.
 “ Mysterious *Voices* are either heard or
 “ fancy’d; and various Forms of *Deity*
 “ seem to present themselves, and appear
 “ more manifest in these sacred *Silvan*
 “ Scenes;

“ Scenes; such as of old gave rise to Tem- Sect. 2.
 “ ples, and favour’d the Religion of the
 “ antient World. Even we our-selves, who
 “ in plain Characters may read DIVINI-
 “ TY from so many bright Parts of Earth,
 “ chuse rather these obscurer Places, to
 “ spell out that mysterious Being, which
 “ to our weak Eyes appears at best under
 “ a Veil of Cloud.”——

HERE he paus’d awhile, and began to cast about his Eyes, which before seem’d fix’d. He look’d more calmly, with an open Countenance and free Air; by which, and other Tokens, I cou’d easily find we were come to an end of our *Descriptions*; and that whether I wou’d or no, THEOCLES was now resolv’d to take his leave of the *Sublime*: the Morning being spent, and the Forenoon by this time well advanced.

S E C T. II.

METHINKS, said he, PHILOCLES! (changing to a familiar Voice) we had better leave these unsociable Places, whither our Fancy has transported us, and return to our-selves here again, in our more conversable Woods, and temperate Climates. Here no fierce Heats nor Colds annoy

Part 3. annoy us, no *Precipices* nor *Cataracts* amaze us. Nor need we here be afraid of our own Voices; whilst we hear the Notes of such a chearful Quire, and find the *Echoes* rather agreeable, and inviting us to talk.

I CONFESS, said I, those foreign *Nymphs* (if there were any belonging to those miraculous Woods) were much too awful Beautys to please me. I found our familiar Home-*Nymphs* a great deal more to my humour. Yet for all this, I cannot help being concern'd for your breaking off just when we were got half the World over, and wanted only to take AMERICA in our way home. Indeed as for EUROPE, I could excuse your making any great *Tour* there, because of the little Variety it wou'd afford us. Besides that it wou'd be hard to see it in any view, without meeting still that *politick* Face of Affairs, which wou'd too much disturb us in our *philosophical* Flights. But for the *Western* Tract, I cannot imagine why you shou'd neglect such noble Subjects as are there; unless perhaps the *Gold* and *Silver*, to which I find you such a bitter Enemy, frighted you from a Mother-Soil so full of it. If these Countrys had been as bare of those Metals as old SPARTA, we might have heard more perhaps of the PERU'S and MEXICO'S than of all ASIA

ASIA and AFRICA. We might have Sect. 2.
 had *Creatures, Plants, Woods, Mountains,*
Rivers, beyond any of those we have
 pass'd. How sorry am I to lose the noble
 AMAZON! How sorry——

HERE as I wou'd have proceeded, I
 saw so significant a Smile on THEOCLES'S
 Face, that it stopt me, out of Curiosity,
 to ask him his Thought.

NOTHING, said he; nothing but *this*
very Subject it-self.—Go on.—I see you'll
 finish it for me. The Spirit of this sort
 of *Prophecy* has seiz'd you. And PHILO-
 CLES, the cold indifferent PHILOCLES,
 is become a Pursuer of the same *mysterious*
 BEAUTY.

'TIS true, said I, (THEOCLES!) I
 own it. Your *Genius*, the *Genius* of the
 Place, and the GREAT GENIUS have
 at last prevail'd. I shall no longer resist
 the Passion growing in me for Things of
 a *natural* kind; where neither *Art*, nor *Natural*
 the *Conceit* or *Caprice* of Man has spoil'd *Beauty*.
 their *genuine Order*, by breaking in upon
 that *primitive State*. Even the rude *Rocks*,
 the mossy *Caverns*, the irregular unwrought
Grotto's, and broken *Falls* of Waters, with
 all the horrid Graces of the *Wilderness* it-
 self, as representing NATURE more, will
 be the more engaging, and appear with a
 Magni-

Part 3. Magnificence beyond the formal Mockery of princely Gardens.—But tell me, I intreat you, how comes it, That, excepting a few *Philosophers* of your sort, the only People who are enamour'd in this way, and seek the *Woods*, the *Rivers*, or *Seashores*, are your poor vulgar LOVERS?

Passion of this kind.

SAY not this, reply'd he, of LOVERS only. For is it not the same with POETS, and all those other *Students* in NATURE, and the *Arts* which copy after her? In short, is not this the real Case of all who are *Lovers* either of the MUSES or the GRACES?

ENTHUSIASM. HOWEVER, said I, all those who are deep in this *romantick* way, are look'd upon, you know, as a People either plainly out of their wits, or over-run with *Melancholy* and * ENTHUSIASM. We always endeavour to recall 'em from these *solitary* Places. And I must own, that often when I have found my Fancy run this way, I have check'd my-self; not knowing what it was possess'd me, when I was passionately struck with Objects of this kind.

* See *Letter of Enthusiasm*, towards the end. See also above, p. 75. And VOL. III. p. 30, &c.

No wonder, reply'd he, if we are at a loss, when we pursue the *Shadow* for the *Substance*. For if we may trust to what our Reasoning has taught us; whatever in Nature is beautiful or charming, is only the faint Shadow of that *First Beauty*. So that every *real* LOVE depending on the *Mind*, and being only the *Contemplation of Beauty*, either as it really is *in it-self*, or as it appears imperfectly in the Objects which strike the *Sense*; how can the rational Mind rest *here*, or be satisfy'd with the absurd *Enjoyment* which reaches the *Sense alone*?

FROM this time forward then, said I, I shall no more have reason to fear those *Beautys* which strike a sort of *Melancholy*, like the Places we have nam'd, or like these solemn *Groves*. No more shall I avoid the moving Accents of *soft Musick*, or fly from the *enchanting Features* of the fairest *human Face*.

IF you are already, reply'd he, such a *Proficient* in this *new* LOVE, that you are sure never to admire the *Representative-BEAUTY*, except for the sake of the *Original*; nor aim at other *Enjoyment*, than of the *rational* kind; you may then be confident. I am so; and presume accordingly, to answer for my-self. However I
shou'd

Part 3.

shou'd not be ill satisfy'd, if you explain'd your-self a little better as to this Mistake of mine you seem to fear.

Enjoy-
ment.

Wou'd it be any help to tell you, " That the Absurdity lay in seeking *the Enjoyment* " elsewhere than in the *Subject* lov'd ? "

The Matter, I must confess, is still mysterious.

Imagine then, good PHILO-CLES, if being taken with the Beauty of the Ocean which you see yonder at a distance, it shou'd come into your head, to seek how to command it ; and like some mighty Admiral, ride Master of the Sea ; wou'd not the Fancy be a little absurd ?

Aburd enough, in conscience. The next thing I shou'd do, 'tis likely, upon this Frenzy, wou'd be to hire some Bark, and go in Nuptial Ceremony, VENETIAN-like, to wed the *Gulf*, which I might call perhaps as properly *my own*.

LET who will call it theirs, reply'd THEOCLES, you will own *the Enjoyment* of this kind to be very different from that which shou'd naturally follow from the Contemplation of the Ocean's *Beauty*. The Bridegroom-Doge, who in his stately *Bu-centaur* floats on the Bosom of his THERIS, has less *Possession* than the poor *Shepherd*, who from a hanging Rock, or Point of some high Promontory, stretch'd at his ease, forgets his feeding Flocks, while he admires *her Beauty*.—But to come nearer home,

home, and make the Question still more Sect. 2.
familiar. Suppose (my PHILOCLES!) that, viewing such a Tract of Country, as this delicious *Vale* we see beneath us, you shou'd for *the Enjoyment* of the Prospect, require the *Property* or *Possession* of the Land.

THE *covetous* Fancy, reply'd I, wou'd be as absurd altogether, as that other *ambitious* one.

O PHILOCLES! said he; May I bring this yet a little nearer? And will you follow me once more? Suppose that being charm'd, as you seem to be, with the *Beauty* of these TREES, under whose shade we rest, you shou'd long for nothing so much as to taste some delicious *Fruit* of theirs; and having obtain'd of Nature some certain *Relish* by which these *Acorns* or *Berrys* of the Wood became as palatable as the *Figs* or *Peaches* of the Garden, you shou'd afterwards, as oft as you revisited these *Groves*, seek hence *the Enjoyment* of them, by satiating your-self in these new Delights.

THE Fancy of this kind, reply'd I, wou'd be fordidly *luxurious*; and as absurd, in my opinion, as either of the former.

Part 3.

Enjoy-
ment.

CAN you not then, on this occasion, said he, call to mind some other *Forms* of a fair kind among us, where the Admiration of Beauty is apt to lead to as irregular a Consequence ?

I FEAR'D, said I, indeed, where this wou'd end, and was apprehensive you wou'd force me at last to think of certain powerful FORMS in *human* Kind, which draw after 'em a Set of eager *Desires*, *Wishes* and *Hopes* ; no way futable, I must confess, to your rational and refin'd Contemplation of *Beauty*. The Proportions of this *living Architecture*, as wonderful as they are, inspire nothing of a *studious* or *contemplative* kind. The more they are view'd, the further they are from satisfying by mere View. Let that which satisfies be ever so disproportionable an Effect, or ever so foreign to its Cause ; censure it as you please, you must allow however that it's *natural*. So that you, THEOCLES, for ought I see, are become the *Accuser* of NATURE, by condemning a *natural Enjoyment*.

FAR be it from us both, said he, to condemn a *Joy* which is from *Nature*. But when we spoke of the *Enjoyment* of these Woods and Prospects, we understood by it a far different kind from that
of

of the inferior Créatures, who rising in Sect. 2.¹ these places, find here their choicest *Food*. Yet we too live by tasteful *Food*; and feel those other Joys of *Sense* in common with them. But 'twas not here (my PHILOCLE!) that we had agreed to place our *Good*; nor consequently our *Enjoyment*. We who were rational, and had Minds, methought, shou'd place it rather in those MINDS; which were indeed abus'd, and cheated of their real *Good*, when drawn to seek absurdly the Enjoyment of it in the Object of *Sense*, and not in those Objects they might properly call *their own*: in which kind, as I remember, we comprehended all which was truly *Fair, Generous, or Good*.

So that BEAUTY, said I, and GOOD, ^{Beauty} with you, THEOCLES, I perceive are ^{and Good,} still * *one and the same*.

'TIS SO, said he. And thus are we return'd again to the Subject of our Yesterday's Morning-Conversation. Whether I have made good my Promise to you, in shewing † the true *Good*, I know not. But so, doubtless, I shou'd have done with good success, had I been able in my poetick Extasys, or by any other Efforts, to have

* *Supra*, p. 238, &c.

† *Supra*, p. 245.

Part 3.

*Beauty
and Good.*

led you into some deep View of *Nature*, and the *Sovereign GENIUS*. We then had prov'd the *Force of Divine BEAUTY*; and form'd in our-selves an *Object* capable and worthy of *real Enjoyment*.

O THEOCLES! said I, well do I remember now the Terms in which you engag'd me, that Morning when you bespoke my *Love* of this *mysterious Beauty*. You have indeed made good your part of the Condition, and may now claim me for a *Profelyte*. If there be any seeming Extravagance in the case, I must comfort myself the best I can, and consider that all sound *Love* and *Admiration* is * ENTHUSIASM: "The Transports of *Poets*, the "Sublime of *Orators*, the Rapture of *Musicians*, the high Strains of the *Virtuosi*; "all mere ENTHUSIASM! Even *Learning* it-self, the *Love* of *Arts* and *Curiosities*, the Spirit of *Travellers* and *Adventurers*; *Gallantry*, *War*, *Heroism*; All, "all ENTHUSIASM!" — 'Tis enough: I am content to be this *new Enthusiast*, in a way unknown to me before.

AND I, reply'd THEOCLES, am content you shou'd call this *Love* of ours ENTHUSIASM: allowing it the Privilege of its Fellow-Passions. For is there

* VOL. I. p. 53, 54.

a fair and plausible *Enthusiasm*, a reasonable *Ecstasy* and *Transport* allow'd to other Subjects, such as Architecture, Painting, Musick; and shall it be exploded *here*? Are there Senses by which all those other Grades and Perfections are perceiv'd? and none by which this higher Perfection and Grace is comprehended? Is it so preposterous to bring that *Enthusiasm* hither, and transfer it from those *secondary* and *scanty* Objects, to this *original* and *comprehensive* One? Observe how the Case stands in all those other Subjects of Art or Science. What difficulty to be in any degree knowing! How long e'er a true Taste is gain'd! How many things shocking, how many offensive at first, which afterwards are known and acknowledg'd the highest Beautys! For 'tis not instantly we acquire the *Sense* by which these Beautys are discoverable. Labour and Pains are requir'd, and Time to cultivate a natural Genius, ever so apt or forward. But Who is there once thinks of cultivating *this* Soil; or of improving any Sense or Faculty which Nature may have given of *this* Mind? And is it a wonder we shou'd be dull then, as we are, confounded, and at a loss in *these* Affairs, blind as to *this* higher Scene, *these* nobler Representations? Which way shou'd we come to understand better? which way be knowing in *these* Beautys? Is Study, Science, or

Part 3.

Chief
Science.

Learning necessary to understand all Beautys else? And for *the Sovereign BEAUTY*, is there no Skill or Science requir'd? In Painting there are *Shades* and *masterly Strokes*, which the Vulgar understand not, but find fault with: in Architecture there is *the Rustick*; in Musick *the Chromatick* kind, and skilful Mixture of *Dissonancys*: And is there nothing which answers to this, in *The WHOLE*?

Beauty.

I MUST confess, said I, I have hitherto been one of those Vulgar, who cou'd never relish *the Shades, the Rustick, or the Dissonancys* you talk of. I have never dreamt of such *Master-pieces* in NATURE. 'Twas my way, to censure freely on the first view. But I perceive I am now oblig'd to go far in the pursuit of *Beauty*; which lies very absconded and deep: And if so, I am well assur'd that my *Enjoyments* hitherto have been very shallow. I have dwelt, it seems, all this while upon the Surface, and enjoy'd only a kind of slight superficial Beautys; having never gone in search of *Beauty it-self*, but of what I *fancy'd* such. Like the rest of the unthinking World, I took for granted that what I liked was *beautiful*; and what I rejoic'd in, was my *Good*. I never scrupled loving what I *fancy'd*; and aiming only at the Enjoyment of what I lov'd, I never troubled my-self with examining

mining what *the Subjects* were, nor ever Sect. 2.
hesitated about their *Choice*. 

BEGIN then, said he, and *chuse*. See what the *Subjects* are; and which you wou'd prefer: which honour with your Admiration, Love and Esteem. For by these again you will be honour'd in your turn. Such, PHILOCLES, as is the Worth of these Companions, such will your Worth be found. As there is Emptiness or Fulness here, so will there be in your Enjoyment. See therefore where *Fulness* is, and where *Emptiness*. See in what Subject resides *the chief Excellence*: where BEAUTY reigns: where 'tis *intire, perfect, absolute*; where *broken, imperfect, short*. View these terrestrial Beautys, and whatever has the appearance of Excellence, and is able to attract. See that which either really is, or stands as in the room of *Fair, Beautiful, and Good*: "A Mass of Metal; a Tract of Land; a Number of Slaves; a Pile of Stones; a human Body of certain Lineaments and Proportions:" Is this the highest of the kind? Is BEAUTY founded then in *Body* only; and not in *Action, Life, or Operation*? —

HOLD! hold! said I (good THEOCLES!) you take this in too high a Key, above my reach. If you wou'd have me

Part 3. accompany you, pray lower this Strain a little ; and talk in a more familiar way.

Beauty,

THUS THEN, said he, (smiling) Whatever Passion you may have for *other Beautys* ; I know, good PHILOCLES, you are no such Admirer of *Wealth* in any kind, as to allow much Beauty to it ; especially in a rude Heap or Mass. But in Medals, Coins, Imboss-work, Statues, and well-fabricated Pieces, of whatever sort, you can discover *Beauty*, and admire the Kind. True, said I ; but not for the *Metal's* sake. 'Tis not then *the Metal*

or *Matter* which is beautiful with you.

No. But *the Art*. Certainly.

ly. *The Art* then is the *Beauty*.

Right. And *the Art* is that which

beautifies. The same. So that

the Beautifying, not the Beautify'd, is the

really *Beautiful*. It seems so. For

that which is beautify'd, is beautiful on-

ly by the accession of something beauti-

fying : and by the recess or withdrawing

of the same, it ceases to be beautiful.

Be it. In respect of Bodys there-

fore, *Beauty* comes and goes. So we

see. Nor is the Body it-self any Cause

either of its coming or staying. None.

So that there is no Principle of Beauty

in *Body*. None at all. For *Body*

can no-way be the Cause of Beauty to it-

self.

self. No-way. Nor govern nor regulate it-self. Nor yet this. Nor mean nor intend it-self. Nor this neither. Must not *that* therefore, which means and intends for it, regulates and orders it, be the Principle of Beauty to it? Of necessity. And what must that be? MIND, I suppose; for what can it be else?

HERE then, said he, is all I would have explain'd to you before: "That *the Beautiful, the Fair, the Comely*, were never in the *Matter*, but in the *Art* and *Design*; never in *Body* it-self, but in the *Form* or *forming Power*." Does not the beautiful *Form* confess this, and speak the Beauty of *the Design*, whene'er it strikes you? What is it but *the Design* which strikes? What is it you admire but MIND, or the Effect of *Mind*? 'Tis *Mind* alone which forms. All which is void of *Mind* is horrid: and Matter formless is *Deformity* it-self.

OF all *Forms* then, said I, Those (according to your Scheme) are the most amiable, and in the first Order of Beauty, which have a power of making other *Forms* themselves: From whence methinks they may be stil'd *the forming Forms*. So far I can easily concur with you, and gladly give the advantage to *the human Form*,

Part 3. *Form*, above those other Beautys of Man's Formation. The Palaces, Equipages and Estates shall never in my account be brought in competition with the original *living Forms* of Flesh and Blood. And for the other, the *dead Forms* of Nature, the Metals and Stones, however precious and dazzling; I am resolv'd to resist their Splendour, and make abject Things of 'em, even in their highest Pride, when they pretend to set off human Beauty, and are officiously brought in aid of the *Fair*.

Orders of
Beauty.

Do you not see then, reply'd THEOCLES, that you have establish'd *Three Degrees* or Orders of Beauty? As how?

First Order.

Why first, *the dead Forms*, as you properly have call'd 'em, which bear a Fashion, and are form'd, whether by Man, or Nature; but have no forming Power, no Action, or Intelligence. Right.

Second Order.

Next, and as the *second kind*, *the Forms which form*; that is, which have Intelligence, Action, and Operation. Right still.

Here therefore is double Beauty. For here is both the Form (the *Effect* of Mind) and *Mind* it self: The first kind low and despicable in respect of this other; from whence the dead Form receives its Lustre and Force of Beauty, For what is a mere *Body*, tho a human one, and ever so exactly fashion'd, if *inward*

ward Form be wanting, and the *Mind* be Sect. 2.
monstrous or imperfect, as in an *Idiot*, or
Savage? This too I can apprehend,
said I; but where is the *third* Order?

HAVE patience, reply'd he, and see
first whether you have discover'd the
whole Force of this *second* Beauty. How
else shou'd you understand the Force of
Love, or have the Power of Enjoyment?
Tell me, I beseech you, when first you
nam'd these *the Forming Forms*, did you
think of no other Productions of theirs be-
sides the *dead Kinds*, such as the Palaces,
the Coins, the Brazen or the Marble Fi-
gures of Men? Or did you think of some-
thing nearer *Life*?

I cou'd easily, said I, have added,
that these *Forms* of ours had a virtue of
producing *other living Forms*, like them-
selves. But this Virtue of theirs, I thought,
was from *another Form* above them, and
cou'd not properly be call'd *their* Virtue
or Art; if in reality there was a *superiour*
Art, or something *Artist-like*, which gui-
ded their Hand, and made Tools of them
in this specious Work.

HAPPILY thought, said he! You
have prevented a Censure which I hardly
imagin'd you cou'd escape. And here you
have unawares discover'd that *third* Order
of

Part 3. of Beauty, which forms not only such as we call mere Forms, but even *the Forms which form*. For we our-selves are notable Architects in Matter, and can *shew* lifeless Bodys brought into Form, and fashion'd by our own hands: but that which fashions even Minds themselves, contains in it-self all the Beautys fashion'd by those Minds; and is consequently the Principle, Source, and Fountain of all *Beauty*.

Third
Order.

It seems so.

THEREFORE whatever Beauty appears in our *second* Order of Forms, or whatever is deriv'd or produc'd from thence, all this is eminently, principally, and originally in this *last* Order of *Supreme and Sovereign Beauty*.

True.

THUS Architecture, Musick, and all which is of human Invention, resolves it-self into this *last* Order.

Right, said I: and thus all the *Enthusiasms* of other kinds resolve themselves into ours. The fashionable Kinds borrow from us, and are nothing without us. We have undoubtedly the Honour of being *Originals*.

NOW



NOW therefore say again, reply'd THEOCLES; Whether are those Fabricks of *Architecture, Sculpture*, and the rest of that sort, the greatest Beautys which Man forms; or are there greater and better? None which I know,

reply'd I. Think, think again, said he: and setting aside those Productions which just now you excepted against, as Master-pieces of *another Hand*; think What there are which more immediately proceed from us, and may more truly be term'd *our Issue*.

I am barren, said I, for this time: you must be plainer yet, in helping me to conceive.

How can I help you, reply'd he? Wou'd you have me be conscious for you, of that which is immediately *your own*, and is solely in, and from *your-self*?

You mean my *Sentiments*, said I.

Certainly, reply'd he: and together with your *Sentiments*, Beauty
moral.

your *Resolutions, Principles, Determinations, Actions*; whatsoever is handsom and noble in the kind; whatever flows from your good *Understanding, Sense, Knowledge* and *Will*; whatever is ingender'd in your


Heart (good PHILOCLE!) or derives it-self from your *Parent-MIND*, which Offspring,
Generation. unlike to other *Parents*, is never spent or exhausted, but gains *Strength* and *Vigor* by producing. So *You* (my Friend!) have

prov'd

Part 3. prov'd it, by many a Work : not suffering
 ~~~~~ that fertile *Part* to remain idle and un-  
 active. Hence those good Parts, which  
 from a natural Genius you have rais'd by  
 due Improvement. And here, - as I can-  
 not but admire the pregnant Genius, and  
*Parent-Beauty* ; so am I satisfy'd of the  
*Offspring*, that it is and will be ever beau-  
 tiful.

I took the Compliment, and wish'd  
 (I told him) the Case were really as he ima-  
 gin'd, that I might justly merit his Esteem  
 and Love. My Study therefore shou'd be  
 to grow *beautiful*, in his way of *Beauty* ;  
 and from this time forward I wou'd do all  
 I cou'd to propagate that lovely Race of  
 mental Children, happily sprung from such  
 a high Enjoyment, and from a Union with  
 what was *Fairest* and *Best*. But 'tis you,  
 THEOCLES, continu'd I, must help my  
 labouring Mind, and be as it were the  
 Midwife to those Conceptions ; which else,  
 I fear, will prove abortive.

You do well, reply'd he, to give me  
 the Midwife's part only : For the Mind  
 conceiving *of it-self*, can only be, as you  
 say, *assisted in the Birth*. Its *Pregnancy* is  
 from its *Nature*. Nor cou'd it ever have  
 been thus *impregnated* by any other *Mind*,  
 than that which form'd it at the begin-  
 ning ; and which, as we have already  
 prov'd,

prov'd, is Original to all *mental*, as well Sect. 2.  
as *other Beauty*. 

Do you maintain then, said I, that these *mental* Children, the Notions and Principles, of *Fair, Just, and Honest*, with the rest of these *Ideas*, are *innate*?

*Innate  
Ideas.*

ANATOMISTS, said he, tell us that the Eggs, which are Principles in Body, are *innate*; being form'd already in the *Fœtus* before the Birth. But *When* it is, whether *before*, or *at*, or *after* the Birth, or at *What* time after, that either these, or other Principles, Organs of Sensation, or Sensations themselves, are *first* form'd in us, is a matter, doubtless, of curious Speculation, but of no great Importance. The Question is, whether the Principles spoken of are *from Art*, or *Nature*? If from *Nature* purely; 'tis no matter for the Time: nor wou'd I contend with you, tho you shou'd deny *Life* it-self to be *innate*, as imagining it follow'd rather than preceded the moment of Birth. But this I am certain of; that *Life*, and the *Sensations*, which accompany Life, come when they will, are from *mere Nature*, and nothing else. Therefore if you dislike the word *Innate*, let us change it, if you will, for INSTINCT; and call *Instinct*, that *Instinct*, which *Nature* teaches, exclusive of *Art*, *Culture* or *Discipline*.

Content, said I.

LEAVING

## Part 3.

Genera-  
tion.

LEAVING then, reply'd he, those admirable Speculations to the *Virtuosi*, the *Anatomists*, and *School-Doctors*; we may safely aver, with all their Consents, that the several Organs, particularly those of Generation, are form'd by *Nature*. Whether is there also, from Nature, think you, any *Instinct* for the after-Use of them? Or whether must *Learning* and *Experience* imprint this Use?

'Tis imprinted, said I, enough in Conscience. The Impression, or *Instinct*, is so strong in the Case, that 'twould be absurdity not to think it *natural*, as well in our own Species, as in other Creatures: amongst whom (as you have already taught me) not only the mere engendering of the Young, but the various and almost infinite Means and Methods of providing for them, are all foreknown. For thus much we may indeed discern in the preparatory Labours and Arts of these wild Creatures; which demonstrate their anticipating *Fancys*, *Pre-conceptions*, or *Pre-sensations*; if I may use a word you taught me \* yesterday.

Pre-concep-  
tions.

I ALLOW your Expression, said THEOCLES, and will endeavour to show you that the same *Pre-conceptions*, of a higher

\* Pag. 307.

degree, have place in human Kind. Do Sect. 2.  
 so, said I, I intreat you: For so far am I from finding in my-self these Pre-conceptions of *Fair* and *Beautiful*, in your sense; that methinks, till now of late, I have hardly known of any thing like them in Nature. How then, said he, wou'd you have known that *outward Fair* and *Beautiful* of human Kind; if such an Object (a fair fleshly one) in all its Beauty, had for the first time appear'd to you, by your-self, this morning, in these Groves? Or do you think perhaps you shou'd have been unmov'd, and have found no difference between *this Form* and any *other*; if first you had not been *instructed*?

I HAVE hardly any Right, reply'd I, to plead this last Opinion, after what I have own'd just before.

WELL then, said he, that I may appear to take no advantage against you; I quit the dazzling *Form*, which carries such a Force of *complicated Beauty*; and am contented to consider separately each of those *simple Beautys*, which taken all together, create this wonderful effect. For you will allow, without doubt, that in respect of *Bodys*, whatever is commonly said of the unexpressible, the unintelligible, the *I-know-not-what* of Beauty; there can lie no Mystery

Part 3. Mystery here, but what plainly belongs either to *Figure, Colour, Motion, or Sound*. Omitting therefore the *three* latter, and their dependent Charms; let us view the Charm in what is simplest of all, *mere Figure*. Nor need we go so high as Sculpture, Architecture, or the Designs of those who from this Study of Beauty have rais'd such delightful Arts. 'Tis enough if we consider the simplest of Figures; as either a round *Ball*, a *Cube*, or *Dye*. Why is even an Infant pleas'd with the first View of these Proportions? Why is the *Sphere* or *Globe*, the *Cylinder* and *Obelisk* prefer'd; and the irregular Figures, in respect of these, rejected and despis'd?

Beauty of  
Body.

I AM ready, reply'd I, to own there is in certain *Figures* a natural \* Beauty, which the Eye finds as soon as the Object is presented to it.

Beauty of  
Soul,

As real,

And neces-  
sarily mo-  
ving.

Is there then, said he, a natural Beauty of *Figures*? and is there not as natural a one of ACTIONS? No sooner the Eye opens upon *Figures*, the Ear to *Sounds*, than straight the *Beautiful* results, and *Grace* and *Harmony* are known and acknowledg'd. No sooner are ACTIONS view'd, no sooner the *human Affections* and

---

\* Pag. 28.

*Passions* discern'd (and they are most of Sect. 2.  
 'em as soon discern'd as felt) than straight  
 an inward EYE distinguishes, and sees the  
*Fair and Shapely, the Amiable and Admirable*,  
 apart from the *Deform'd, the Foul, the* Idea Natural.  
*Odious, or the Despicable*. How is it possible  
 therefore not to own, "That as these  
 " *Distinctions* have their Foundation in  
 " *Nature*, the Discernment it-self is *natural*,  
 " *ral*, and from NATURE alone?"

IF this, I told him, were as he represented it; there cou'd never, I thought, be any Disagreement among Men concerning Actions and Behaviour: as which was *Base*, which *Worthy*; which *Handsom*, and which *Deform'd*. But now we found perpetual Variance among Mankind; whose Differences were chiefly founded on this Disagreement in Opinion; "The one *affirming*, the other *denying* that this, or "that, was *fit* or *decent*."

EVEN by this then, reply'd he, it appears there is Fitness and Decency in Actions; since *the Fit and Decent* is in this Controversy ever pre-suppos'd: And whilst Men are at odds about the Subjects, the Thing it-self is universally agreed. For neither is there Agreement in Judgments about other *Beautys*. 'Tis controverted "Which is the finest *Pile*, the loveliest *Shape* or *Face*:" But without controversy,

Part 3. 'tis allow'd " There is a BEAUTY of  
 each kind." This no-one goes about to  
 teach : nor is it learnt by any ; but con-  
 fess'd by All. All own the *Standard, Rule,*  
*Standard* and *Measure* : But in applying it to Things,  
*own'd.* Disorder arises, Ignorance prevails, Interest  
 and Passion breed Disturbance. Nor can it  
 otherwise happen in the Affairs of Life,  
 whilst that which interestes and engages  
 Men as *Good*, is thought different from  
 that which they admire and praise as *Honest.*—But with us (PHILOCLEES!) 'tis  
 better settled : since for our parts, we  
 have already decreed " That \* *Beauty* and  
 " *Good* are still the same."

*Confirma-  
 tion.*

I REMEMBER, said I, what you  
 forc'd me to acknowledg more than once  
 before. And now (good THEOCLES!)  
 that I am become so willing a Disciple, I  
 want not so much to be *convinc'd*, me-  
 thinks, as to be *confirm'd* and *strengthen'd*.  
 And I hope this last Work may prove your  
 easiest Task.

NOT unless you help in it *your-self*, re-  
 ply'd THEOCLES: For this is necessary,  
 as well as becoming. It had been indeed  
 shameful for you to have yielded without  
 making good Resistance. To help one's-

---

\* Pag. 238, 245, 399.



self to be convinc'd, is *to prevent Reason*, Sect. 2. and bespeak Error and Delusion. But upon fair Conviction, to give our heart up to the evident side, and reinforce the Impression, this is *to help Reason heartily*. And thus we may be said *honestly to persuade our-selves*. Shew me then how I may best persuade my-self.

HAVE courage, said he, PHILOCLES ! (raising his Voice) Be not offended that I say, *Have Courage !* 'Tis COWARDICE alone betrays us. For whence can *false Shame* be, except from *Cowardice* ? To be ashamed of what one is sure can never be shameful, must needs be from the want of Resolution. We seek the *Right* and *Wrong* in things ; we examine what is *Honourable*, what *Shameful* : and having at last determin'd, we dare not stand to our own judgment, and are ashamed to own there is really a *Shameful* and an *Honourable*.

" Hear me (says one who pretends to value PHILOCLES, and be valu'd by him) There can be no such thing as real *Valuableness* or *Worth* ; nothing in itself estimable or amiable, odious or shameful. All is OPINION : 'Tis *Opinion*, which makes Beauty, and unmakes it. The Graceful or Ungraceful in things, the Decorum and its Contrary, the Amiable and Unamiable, Vice, Virtue, Honour, Shame, all this is founded *Measure of Virtue and Vice,*

Part 3.

“ in *Opinion* only. *OPINION* is the  
 “ *Law and Measure*. Nor has *Opinion* any  
 “ Rule besides mere *CHANCE*; which  
 “ varies it, as *Custom* varies: and makes  
 “ now this, now that, to be thought wor-  
 “ thy, according to the Reign of *Fashion*,  
 “ and the ascendent Power of *Educa-*  
 “ *tion*.”

Falshood  
 of this.

What shall we say to such-  
 a-one? How represent to him his Absur-  
 dity and Extravagance? Will he desist the  
 sooner? Or shall we ask *what Shame*,  
 of one who acknowledges no *Shame-*  
*ful*? Yet he derides, and cries, *Ridi-*  
*culous*!

By what Right? what Ti-  
 tle? For thus, if I were *PHILOCLES*,  
 wou'd I defend my-self: “ Am I ridicu-  
 “ lous? As how? *What* is ridiculous?  
 “ *Every-thing*? or *Nothing*?”

*Ri-*  
*diculous* indeed! But something  
 then, something there is *Ridiculous*: and  
 the Notion, it seems, is right, “ of a  
 “ *Shameful* and a *Ridiculous*, in things.”

shame.

How then shall we apply the Notion?  
 For this being wrong apply'd, cannot it-  
 self but be ridiculous. Or will he who  
 cries *SHAME*, refuse to acknowledg *any*  
 in his turn? Does he not blush, nor seem  
 discountenanc'd on any occasion? If he  
 does, the Case is very distinct from that  
 of mere Grief or Fear. The Disorder  
 he feels is from a Sense of what is shame-  
 ful and odious in it-self, not of what is  
 hurtful or dangerous in its Consequences.

For

For the greatest Danger in the world can never breed Shame : nor can the *Opinion* of all the World compel us to it, where *our own Opinion* is not a Party. We may be afraid of appearing impudent, and may therefore feign a Modesty. But we can never really blush for any thing beside what we think truly *Shameful*, and what we shou'd still blush for, were we ever so secure as to our Interest, and out of the reach of all Inconvenience which cou'd happen to us from the thing we were ashamed of.

THUS, continu'd he, shou'd I be able, by Anticipation, to defend my-self; and looking narrowly into Mens Lives, and that which influenc'd 'em on all occasions, I shou'd have Testimony enough to make me say within my-self, " Let who will be my Adversary in this Opinion, I shall find him some way or other prepossess'd with that of which he wou'd endeavour to dispossess me." Has he Gratitude or Resentment, Pride or Shame? Which ever way it be, he acknowledges a Sense of *Just* and *Unjust*, *Worthy* and *Mean*. If he be Grateful, or expects Gratitude, I ask " *Why?* and on What account?" If he be angry, if he indulges Revenge, I ask " How? and in what Case? Revenge'd of *What?* of a Stone, or Mad-man?" Who is so mad? " But

Part 3. " for What? For a Chance-hurt? an  
 ~~~~~ " Accident against Thought, or Inten-  
 Anger, an " tion?" Who is so unjust?

Acknow-
 ledgment
 of Just
 and Un-
 just.

Therefore there is *Just* and *Unjust*; and belonging to it *a natural Presumption* or *Anticipation*, on which the RESENTMENT or ANGER is founded. For what else shou'd make the wickedest of Mankind often prefer the Interest of their Revenge to all other Interests, and even to Life it-self, except only *a Sense of Wrong*, natural to all Men, and *a Desire to prosecute that Wrong* at any rate? Not for their own sakes, since they sacrifice their very Being to it; but out of hatred to *the imagin'd Wrong*, and from a certain *Love of JUSTICE*, which even in *unjust* Men is by this Example shewn to be beyond *the Love of LIFE it-self*.

Pride,

THUS as to PRIDE, I ask, " Why
 " *proud*? Why *conceited*? and of *What*?
 " Does any-one who has Pride think mean-
 " ly or indifferently of himself?" No:
 but honourable. And how this, if
 there be no real *Honour* or *Dignity* pre-
 suppos'd? For Self-valuation supposes *Self-*
worth; and in a Person conscious of real
 Worth, is either no Pride, or a just and
 noble one. In the same manner, Self-
 contempt supposes a *Self-meanness* or *Defec-*
tiveness; and may be either a just Mode-
 sty, or unjust Humility. But this is cer-
 tain

an Ac-
 knowledg-
 ments of
 Worth and
 Baseness.

tain, that whoever is proud, must be proud Sect. 2.
 of something. And we know that Men of
 thorow Pride will be proud even in the
 meanest Circumstances, and when there is
 no visible Subject for them to be proud of,
 But they descry *a Merit* in themselves,
 which others cannot: And 'tis this *Merit*
 they admire. No matter whether it be
 really in them, as they imagine: It is *a*
Worth still, *an Honour*, or *Merit* which
 they admire, and wou'd do, wherever they
 saw it, in any Subject besides. For *then* it
 is, *then* only, that they are humbled,
 " When they see in a more eminent degree
 " in *others*, What they respect and admire
 " so much in *themselves*."—And thus
 as long as I find Men either *angry* or *re-*
vengeful, *proud* or *asham'd*, I am safe;
 For they conceive *an Honourable* and *Dis-*
honourable, a *Foul* and *Fair*, as well as I.
 No matter *where* they place it, or *how* they
 are mistaken in it: This hinders not my
 being satisfy'd " That the Thing *is*, and is
 " universally *acknowledg'd*; That it is of
 " *Nature's* Impression, *naturally conceiv'd*, *Natural*
 " and by no *Art* or *Counter-Nature* to be *Impression*,
 " eradicated or destroy'd."


AND NOW, what say you, PHILO-
 CLES, (continu'd he) to this Defence I
 have been making for you? 'Tis ground-
 ed, as you see, on the Supposition of

Part 3. your being deeply engag'd in this philosophical Cause. But perhaps you have yet many Difficultys to get over, e'er you can so far take part with *Beauty*, as to make this to be your *Good*.

I HAVE no difficulty so great, said I, as not to be easily remov'd. My Inclinations lead me strongly this way: for I am ready enough to yield there is no real *Good* beside *the Enjoyment of Beauty*. And I am as ready, reply'd THEOCLES, to yield There is no real Enjoyment of Beauty beside what is *Good*. Excellent! But upon reflection, I fear I am little beholden to you for your Concession.

As how? Because shou'd I offer to contend for any Enjoyment of Beauty out of your mental Way, you wou'd, I doubt; call such Enjoyment of mine *absurd*; as you did once before. Undoubtedly I shou'd. For what is it shou'd enjoy, or be capable of Enjoyment, except MIND? or shall we say, *Body enjoys*? By the help of *Sense*, perhaps; not otherwise. Is BEAUTY, then, *the Object of Sense*? Say how? Which way? For otherwise the help of *Sense* is nothing in the Case: And if *Body* be of it-self incapable, and *Sense* no help to it, to apprehend or enjoy Beauty, there remains only the MIND which is capable either to apprehend or to enjoy.

TRUE,

TRUE, said I; but show me, then, 
 “ Why BEAUTY may not be *the Object*
 “ of *the Sense* ?” Shew me first, I *Sense*.
 intreat you, “ *Why, Where, or in What*
 “ you fancy it may be so ?” Is it not
Beauty which first excites the Sense, and
 feeds it afterwards in the Passion we call
Love ? Say in the same manner,
 “ That it is *Beauty* first excites the Sense,
 “ and feeds it afterwards in the Passion we
 “ call *Hunger*.” — You will not say it.
 The Thought, I perceive, displeases you.
 As great as the Pleasure is of good Eating,
 you disdain to apply the Notion of *Beauty*
 to the good Dishes which create it. You
 wou’d hardly have applauded the pre-
 posterous Fancy of some luxurious RO-
 MANS of old, who cou’d relish a Fri-
 cassée the better for hearing it was com-
 pos’d of Birds which wore a beautiful Fea-
 ther, or had sung deliciously. Instead of
 being incited by such a historical Account
 of Meats, you wou’d be apt, I believe, to
 have less Appetite, the more you search’d
 their Origin, and descended into the *Kitch-*
in-Science, to learn the several Forms and
 Changes they had undergone, e’er they
 were serv’d at this elegant voluptuous Ta-
 ble. But tho the *Kitchen-Forms* be ever
 so disgraceful, you will allow that the *Ma-*
terials of the Kitchen, such, for instance,
 as the *Garden* furnishes, are really fair and
 beautiful

Part 3. beautiful in their kind. Nor will you deny Beauty to the wild *Field*, or to these *Flowers* which grow around us, on this verdant Couch. And yet, as lovely as are these Forms of Nature, the shining *Grass*, or silver'd *Moss*, the flowry *Thyme*, wild *Rose*, or *Honey-suckle* : 'tis not their BEAUTY allures the neighbouring Herds, delights the brouzing Fawn, or Kid, and spreads the Joy we see amidst the feeding Flocks: 'Tis not the *Form* rejoices; but that which is beneath the Form: 'tis *Savouriness* attracts, *Hunger* impels; and *Thirst* better allay'd by the clear Brook than the thick Puddle, makes the *fair* NYMPH to be prefer'd, whose Form is otherwise slighted. For never can the *Form* be of real force where it is un contemplated, unjudg'd of, unexamined, and stands only as the accidental Note or Token of what appeases provok'd Sense, and satisfies the brutish Part. Are you persuaded of this, good PHILOCLES? or rather than not give Brutes the advantage of *Enjoyment*, will you allow them also a Mind and rational Part?

Not so, I told him.

IF BRUTES therefore, said he, be incapable of knowing and enjoying Beauty, as being *Brutes*, and having SENSE only (the brutish part) for their own share; it follows, " That neither can MAN by
" the

“ the same *Sense* or brutish Part, conceive Sect. 2.
 “ or enjoy *Beauty* : But all the *Beauty* and ~~~~~
 “ *Good* he enjoys, is in a nobler way, and
 “ by the help of what is noblest, his
 “ MIND and REASON.” Here lies his Reason.
Dignity and highest *Interest* : Here his *Ca-*
capacity toward Good and Happiness. His
Ability or *Incompetency*, his *Power* of En-
 joyment, or his *Impotence*, is founded in
 this alone. As this is *sound, fair, noble,*
worthy ; so are its Subjects, Acts and Em-
 ployments. For as the riotous MIND,
 captive to *Sense*, can never enter in com-
 petition, or contend for Beauty with the
 virtuous MIND of Reason’s Culture ; so Compari-
 son of Ob-
 jects,
 neither can the *Objects* which allure the
 former, compare with those which at-
 tract and charm the latter. And when and En-
 joyments.
each gratifies it-self in the Enjoyment and
 Possession of its Object ; how evidently
 fairer are the Acts which join the latter
Pair, and give a *Soul* the Enjoyment of
 what is *generous* and *good* ? This at least,
 PHILOCLEES, you will surely allow,
 That when you place a Joy elsewhere
 than in the Mind ; *The Enjoyment* it-self
 will be no beautiful Subject, nor of any
 graceful or agreeable Appearance. But
 when you think how *Friendship* is enjoy’d,
 how *Honour, Gratitude, Candour, Benig-*
nity, and all internal Beauty ; how all
 the *social* Pleasures, *Society* it-self, and all
 which constitutes the Worth and Happi-
 ness

Part 3. nefs of Mankind; you will here surely
 ~~~~~ allow Beauty in the *Act*, and think it  
 worthy to be view'd, and pass'd in re-  
 view often by the glad Mind, happily  
 conscious of the generous Part, and of  
 its own Advancement and Growth in  
 Beauty.

Recapitu-  
 lation.

THUS, PHILOCLES, (continu'd he,  
 after a short Pause) thus have I presum'd  
 to treat of *Beauty* before so great a Judg,  
 and such a skillful Admirer as your-self.  
 For taking rise from Nature's Beauty,  
 which transported me, I gladly ventur'd  
 further in the Chase; and have accompa-  
 ny'd you in search of Beauty, as it re-  
 lates to us, and makes our highest *Good*,  
 in its sincere and natural Enjoyment.  
 And if we have not idly spent our hours,  
 nor rang'd in vain thro these deserted Re-  
 gions; it shou'd appear from our strict  
 Search, that there is nothing so divine as  
 BEAUTY: which belonging not to *Body*,  
 nor having any Principle or Existence ex-  
 cept in MIND and REASON, is alone  
 discover'd and acquir'd by this diviner Part,  
 when it inspects *it-self*, the only Object  
 worthy of it-self. For whate'er is void of  
 Mind, is *Void* and *Darkness* to the *Mind's*  
 EYE. This languishes and grows dim,  
 whene'er detain'd on foreign Subjects;  
 but thrives and attains its natural Vigour,  
 when

when employ'd in Contemplation of what Sect. 2.  
 is like it-self. 'Tis thus the *improving*  
 MIND, slightly surveying other Objects,  
 and passing over Bodys, and the common  
 Forms (where only a Shadow of Beauty  
 rests) ambitiously presses onward to its  
*Source*, and views *the Original* of Form  
 and Order in that which is intelligent.  
 And thus, O PHILOCLES! may we im-  
 prove and become Artists in the kind; *Knowledge*  
 learning "To know *Our-selves*, and what *of our-*  
 " *That* is, which by improving, we may *selves.*  
 " be sure to advance our Worth, and real  
 " Self-Interest." For neither is this *Know-* *Interest.*  
*ledg* acquir'd by Contemplation of Bodys,  
 or the outward Forms, the View of Pa-  
 geantrys; the Study of Estates and Ho-  
 nours: nor is He to be esteem'd that  
 self-improving Artist, who makes a For- *Ability*  
 tune out of these; but he (*He* only) is  
 the *wise* and *able* Man, who with a slight  
 regard to these Things, applies himself  
 to cultivate another Soil, builds in a dif-  
 ferent Matter from that of Stone or Mar-  
 ble; and having righter Models in his  
 Eye, becomes in truth the *Architect* of  
*his own Life* and *Fortune*: by laying within  
 himself the lasting and sure Foundations  
 of *Order*, *Peace* and *Concord*.—But now  
 'tis time to think of returning home.  
 The Morning is far spent. Come! Let  
 us away, and leave these uncommon Sub-  
 jects;

Part 3. jects; till we retire again to these remote  
 ~~~~~ and unfrequented Places.

AT THESE words THEOCLES mending his pace, and going down the Hill, left me at a good distance; till he heard me calling earnestly after him. Having join'd him once again, I begg'd he wou'd stay a little longer: or if he were resolv'd so soon to leave both the *Woods*, and that Philosophy which he confin'd to 'em; that he wou'd let me however part with 'em more gradually, and leave the best Impression on me he cou'd, against my next Return. For as much convinc'd as I was, and as great a Convert to his Doctrine, my Danger still, I own'd to him, was very great: and I foresaw that when the Charm of these Places, and his Company was ceas'd, I shou'd be apt to relapse, and weakly yield to that too powerful Charm, *the World*. Tell me, continu'd I, how is it possible to hold out against it, and withstand the general Opinion of Mankind, who have so different a Notion of that which we call *Good*? Say truth now, THEOCLES, can any thing be more odd, or dissonant from the common Voice of the World, than what we have determin'd in this matter?

WHOM

WHOM shall we follow then? reply'd he. Whose Judgment or Opinion shall we take, concerning What is *Good*, What *contrary*? If *All*, or *any part* of Mankind are consonant with themselves, and can agree in this; I am content to leave *Philosophy*, and follow them: If otherwise; Why shou'd we not adhere to what we have chosen?—Let us then, in another View, consider how this Matter stands.

S E C T. III.

WE THEN walk'd gently homewards (it being almost Noon) and he continu'd his Discourse.

ONE Man, said he, affects the *Hero*; Manners of Men. esteems it the highest Advantage of Life, to have seen War, and been in Action in the Field. Another laughs at this Humour; counts it all Extravagance and Folly; prizes his own *Wit* and *Prudence*; and wou'd take it for a Disgrace to be thought adventurous. One Person is Contrary Pursuits. assiduous and indefatigable in advancing himself to the Character of a *Man of Business*. Another on the contrary thinks this impertinent; values not Fame, or a Character in the World: and by his good-will


Part 3. will wou'd always be in a *Debauch*, and never live out of the *Stews* or *Taverns*; where he enjoys, as he thinks, his highest Good. One values *Wealth*, as a means only to indulge his *Palat*, and to eat finely.

Mutual Censure. Another loaths this, and affects *Popularity*, and a *Name*. One admires *Musick* and *Paintings*, *Cabinet-curiositys*, and in-door Ornaments: Another admires *Gardens*, *Architecture*, and the Pomp of *Buildings*. Another, who has no *Gusto* of either sort, believes all those they call *VIRTUOSI* to be half-distracted. One looks upon all Expençe to be Madness; and thinks only *Wealth* it-self to be Good. One *games*; another *dresses*, and studies an *Equipage*; another is full of *Heraldry*, *Points of Honour*, a *Family*, and a *Blood*. One recommends *Gallantry* and *Intrigue*; another ordinary *Good-fellowship*; another *Buffonery*, *Satir*, and the common *Wit*; another *Sports*, and the *Country*; another a *Court*; another *Travelling*, and the sight of *foreign Parts*; another *Poetry*, and the fashionable *Learning*.—All these go different ways. All censure one another, and are despicable in one another's eyes. By fits too they are as despicable in *their own*, and as often out of conceit with themselves, as their *Humour* changes, and their *Passion* turns from one thing to another.—What is it then I shou'd be concern'd for?

Whose

Disagreement with one another;

And with themselves.

Whose Censure do I fear? Or by whom, Sect. 3.
after all, shall I be guided? 

IF I ask, "Are RICHES *good*, when *Riches*,
"only heap'd up, and un-employ'd?"
One answers, "*They are.*" The rest *de-*
ny. "How is it then they are to be
"employ'd in order to be good?" All
disagree. All tell me different things.

"Since therefore RICHES are not, of
"themselves, *good* (as most of you de-
"clare;) And since there is no Agree-
"ment among you *which way* they become
"good; why may not I hold it for my
"Opinion, that they are neither good *in*
"themselves, nor *directly* any Cause or
"Means of Good?"

IF there be those who wholly despise *Fame and*
FAME; And if among those who covet *Honour.*
it, he who desires it for one thing, despises
it for another; he who seeks it with some
Men, despises it with others: Why may
not I say, "That neither do I know how
"any *Fame* can be call'd a *Good*?"

IF of those who covet PLEASURE, *Pleasure*
they who admire it in *one* kind, are supe-
rior to it *in another*; Why may not I
say, "That neither do I know *which* of
"these Pleasures, or how *Pleasure* it-self,
"can be call'd *Good*?"

IF among those who covet LIFE ever so earnestly, that Life which to *One* is eligible and amiable, is to *Another* despicable and vile; Why may not I say, "That neither do I know how *Life* it-self can, of it-self, be thought a *Good*?"

Inslavement.

IN the mean time, This I know certainly; "That the necessary Consequence of esteeming these things highly, is to be a *Slave*, and consequently miserable." — But perhaps (*PHILOCLEES*!) you are not yet enough acquainted with this odd kind of Reasoning.

LIBERTY.

Goods of Fortune.

MORE, said I, than I believe you can easily imagine. I perceiv'd the goodly Lady, your celebrated Beauty, was about to appear a-new: and I easily knew again that fair Face of LIBERTY, which I had seen but once in the * Picture you drew yesterday of that Moral Dame. I can assure you, I think of her as highly as possible: and find that without her Help, toraise one above these seemingly essential Goods, and make one more easy and indifferent towards *Life*, and towards a *Fortune*; twill be the hardest thing in the world to enjoy *either*. Sollicitude, Cares,

* *Supra*, p. 252. And VOL. III. p. 201, 307, &c.

and Anxiety, will be multiply'd; and in this unhappy Dependency, 'tis necessary to make court, and be not a little servile. To flatter the Great, to bear Insults, to stoop, and fawn, and abjectly resign one's Sense and Manhood; all this must courageously be endur'd, and carry'd off, with as free an Air, and good Countenance as possible, by one who studies Greatness of this sort, who knows the general way of Courts, and how to fix unshak'd Fortune. I need not mention the Envyings, the Mistrusts, and Jealousys —

No, truly, said he (interrupting me) neither need you. But finding you so sensible, as I do, of this unhappy State, and of its inward Sores (whatever may be its outward Looks) How is it possible but you must find the Happiness of that other contrary State? Can you not call to mind what we resolv'd concerning *Nature*? Can any thing be more desirable than to follow her? Or is it not by this Freedom from our Passions and low Interests, that we are reconcil'd to the goodly Order of the Universe; that we harmonize with *Nature*; and live in Friendship both with God and Man?

LET us compare, continu'd he, the Advantages of each State, and let their

Goods of the Mind

Goods

Part 3.

Comparison.

Goods one against another: On one side, those which we found were *uncertainly* so; and depended both on Fortune, Age, Circumstances and Humour: On the other side, these which being *certain* themselves, are founded on the Contempt of those others so uncertain. Is manly *Liberty*, *Generosity*, *Magnanimity*, not a *Good*? May we not esteem as Happiness, that *Self-Enjoyment* which arises from a Consistency of Life and Manners, a Harmony of Affections, a Freedom from the Reproach of Shame or Guilt, and a Consciousness of Worth and Merit with all Mankind, our Society, Country, and Friends: all which is founded in Virtue only? A *Mind* subordinate to Reason, a *Temper* humaniz'd, and fitted to all natural Affection; an Exercise of *Friendship* uninterrupted; a thorow *Candor*, *Benignity*, and *Good Nature*; with constant *Security*, *Tranquillity*, *Equanimity* (if I may use such *philosophical* Terms) are not these ever, and at all seasons *Good*? Is it of *these* one can at any time nauseate and grow weary? Are there any particular Ages, Seasons, Places, Circumstances, which must accompany *these*, to make 'em agreeable? Are *these* variable and inconstant? Do *these*, by being ardently belov'd, or sought, occasion any Disturbance or Misery? Can *these* be at any time overvalu'd? Or,

to

to say more yet, can these be ever taken Sect. 3.
 from us, or can we ever be hinder'd in
 the Enjoyment of 'em, unless by our-
 selves? How can we better praise the
 Goodness of *Providence*, than in this,
 "That it has plac'd our Happiness and
 "Good in things *We* can bestow upon our-
 "selves?"

If this be so, said I, I see no reason we
 have to accuse Providence on any account.
 But Men, I fear, will hardly be brought to
 this good Temper, while their Fancy is
 so strong, as it naturally is, towards those
 other movable *Goods*. And in short, if
 we may depend on what is said commonly,
 "All Good is merely as we fancy it. 'Tis
 "Conceit which makes it. All is OPI-
 "NION and *Fancy* only." Opinion
All.

WHEREFORE then, said he, do we
act at any time? Why *chuse*, or why *pre-*
fer one thing to another? You will
 tell me, I suppose, 'tis because we fancy it,
 or fancy *Good* in it. Are we there-
 fore to follow every *present* Fancy, Opi-
 nion, or Imagination of Good? If so, then
 we must follow that at *one* time, which we
 decline at *another*; approve at *one* time,
 what we disapprove at *another*; and be at
 perpetual variance with our-selves. But
 if we are not to follow *all* Fancy or Opi-
 nion

Part 3.

Opinion.

nion alike; If it be allow'd, *That* of
 "Fancies, some are true, some false," then
 we are to examine every Fancy; and there
 is some Rule or other, by which to judge
 and determine. 'Twas the Fancy of one
 Man to set fire to a beautiful Temple, in
 order to obtain immortal Memory or
 Fame. 'Twas the Fancy of another Man
 to conquer the World, for the same Rea-
 son, or what was very like it. If this
 were really the Man's Good; why do we
 wonder at him? If the Fancy were wrong, I
 say plainly in what it was so; or why the
 Subject was not Good to him, as he fan-
 cy'd? Either therefore, *That* is every
 "Man's Good which he fancies," and
 "because he fancies it, and is not content
 without it." Or otherwise, There is
 "That in which the Nature of Man is
 satisfy'd; and which alone must be his
 Good." If That in which the Nature
 of Man is satisfy'd, and can rest contented,
 be alone his Good; then he is a Fool
 who follows that with Earnestness, as his
 Good, which a Man can be without, and
 yet be satisfy'd and contented. In the same
 manner is he a Fool who flies that earnestly
 as his ILL, which a Man may endure, and
 yet be easy and contented. Now a Man
 may possibly not have burnt a Temple (as
 PROSTRATUS) and yet may be con-
 tented. Or tho' he may not have con-
 quer'd

quer'd the World (as ALEXANDER) Sect. 3.
 yet he may be easy and contented: as he
 may still without any of those Advantages
 of Power, Riches, or Renown; if his FAN-
 cy hinders not. In short, we shall find,
 "That without any one of those which
 "are commonly call'd Goods, a Man may
 "be contented:" As, on the contrary,
 "He may possess them all, and still be
 "discontented, and not a jot the happier."
 If so: it follows, "That Happiness is
 "from within, not from without." A
 good FANCY is the Main. And thus,
 you see, I agree with you, "That * OPI-
 "NION is all in all." — But what is
 this PHILOCLES, which has seiz'd you?
 You seem of a sudden grown deeply
 thoughtful.

Opinion
 All, in
 what
 sense.

To tell you truth, said I, I was con-
 sidering What would become of me, if, af-
 ter all, I should, by your means, turn
 Philosopher.

The Change, truly,
 would be somewhat extraordinary, re-
 ply'd THEOCLES. But be not con-
 cern'd. The Danger is not so great. And
 Experience shews us every day, That for
 talking or writing Philosophy, People are
 not at all the nearer being PHILOSOP-
 HERS.



BUT, said I, the very *Name* is a kind of Reproach. The word *Idiot* stood formerly as the Opposite to *Philosopher*: but now-a-days it means nothing more commonly than *the PHILOSOPHER himself*.

Philosophy.

YET, in effect (reply'd he) what else is it we all do in general, than *philosophize*? If *PHILOSOPHY* be, as we take it, *the Study of Happiness*; must not every-one, in some manner or other, either skilfully or unskilfully *philosophize*? Is not every Deliberation concerning our main Interest, every Correction of our Taste, every Choice and Preference in Life to be reckon'd of *this kind*? For "If Happiness be not allow'd to be from *Self*, and from *within*; then Either is it from *outward Things* alone, or from *Self* and *outward Things* together." If from *outward Things* alone; shew it us, in fact, "That all Men are happy in proportion to these; and that no-one who possesses them is ever miserable by his own fault."

But this, it seems, hardly any-one will pretend to evince: All own the contrary.

Therefore "If Happiness be partly from *Self*, partly from *outward Things*; then Each must be consider'd, and a certain Value set on the Concerns

of

" of an *inward* kind; and which depend Sect. 3.
 " on *Self* alone." If so: and that I con-
 sider " *How*, and in *What* these are to be
 " prefer'd; When and on what occasion
 " they are in season, or out of season;
 " When properly to take place, when to
 " yield: " What's this, after all, but to *phi-*
losophize? Yet even this, still, is e-
 nough to put one out of the ordinary way
 of thinking, and give one an unhappy turn
 for Business, and the World. Right!
 For this also is to be consider'd, and well
 weigh'd. And therefore *This*, still, is PHI-
 LOSOPHY; " To inquire Where, and in
 " what respect one may be most a *Loser*;
 " Which are the greatest *Gains*, the most
 " profitable *Exchanges*;" since every thing
 in this World goes by *Exchange*. No-
 thing is had for Nothing. *Favour* requires
 Courtship: *Interest* is made by Sollicita-
 tion: *Honours* are acquir'd with Hazard;
Riches with Pains; *Learning* and *Accom-*
plishments by Study and Application. *Se-*
curity, *Rest*, *Indolence* are to be had at
 other Prices. They may be thought, per-
 haps, to come easy. For " What Hard-
 " ship is there? Where is the Harm?"
 'Tis only to abate of *Fame* and *Fortune*.
 'Tis only to wave the *Point of Honour*,
 and share somewhat less of *Interest*. If
 this be easy; all is well. Some *Patience*,
 you see, is necessary in the case. *Privacy*
 must

Part 3.

Philosophy.

must be endur'd; even *Obscurity* and *Contempt*.—Such are the *Conditions*. And thus Every-thing has its *CONDITION*. *Power* and *Preferments* are to be had at one rate; *Pleasures* at another; *LIBERTY* and *HONESTY* at another. A good *MIND* must be paid for, as other things.

But we had best beware lest, perhaps, we pay *too dear* for It. Let us be assur'd we have a good Bargain. Come on then.—Let us account.—What is a *MIND* worth? What *Allowance* may one handsomely make for it? or What may one well afford it for?—If I part with It, or abate of It, 'tis not for *Nothing*. Some value I must needs set upon my *Liberty*; some upon my *inward Character*. Something there is in what we call *WORTH*; something in *Sincerity*, and a *sound HEART*. *Orderly Affections*, *generous Thoughts*, and a *commanding REASON*, are fair Possessions, not lightly to be given up. I am to consider first, “What may be *their Equivalent*?” Whether I shall find my Account in letting these *inward Concerns* run as they please; or “Whether I shall not be better secur'd against Fortune by adjusting matters *at home*, rather than by making *Interest abroad*, and acquiring first one great Friend, then another, to add still more and more to my *Estate* or *Quality*?”

"*Dialog*". For Where am I to take up? Sect. 3. I
 Begin, and let *the* *Bounds*. Let me hear
 positively "How far I am to go, and
 "Why no further?" What is a *moderate*
Fortune, a *Competency*, and those other De-
 grees commonly talk'd of? Where is my
Angel to stop? or how High may I suf-
 fer it to rise? How far may I engage in
Love? How far give way to *Ambition*?
 How far to other *Appetites*? Or must I to
 let all loose? Are *all* *Passions* to take
 their swing; and no Application to be
 given to 'em, but all to *the outward Things*.
 they aim at? Or if any Application be
 requisite, say plainly, "How much to
one, and how much to *the other*?"
 How far are the *Appetites* to be minded,
 and how far *inward Things*? Give us
 the Measure and Rule. See Whether this
 be not to *philosophize*? and Whether wil-
 lingly or unwillingly, knowingly or un-
 knowingly, directly or indirectly, every-
 one does not as much? What then
 is *the Difference*? Which Manner is *the*
best? Here lies the Question. This
 is what I would have you weigh and ex-
 amine. But the Examination (say
 "you") is troublesome; and I had better
 be without it. To *who* tells you thus?
 "Your REASON, you say, whose Force,
 "of necessity, you must yield to."
 Tell me therefore, have you fitly culti-
 vated

Part 3. vated that REASON of your's, polish'd
 it, bestow'd the necessary Pains on it, and
 exercis'd it on this Subject? Or is it like
 to determine full as well when un-exer-
 cis'd, as when thorowly exercis'd, or ever
 so expert? Consider, pray, in *Mathema-*
ticks; Whose is the better REASON of
 the two, and fitter to be rely'd on? The
 Practiser's? or his who is unpractis'd?
 Whose in the way of *War*, of *Policy*, or
Civil Affairs? Whose in *Merchandize*,
Law, *Physick*?—And in MORALITY
 and LIFE, I ask still, *Whose*? May he
 not, perhaps, be allow'd the best Judge of
Living, who *studies* LIFE, and endeavours
 to form it by some *Rule*? Or is he in-
 deed to be esteem'd most knowing in the
 matter, who *slightly* examines it, and
 who *accidentally* and *unknowingly* philoso-
phizes?

Philoso-
 phy.

THUS, PHILOCTES (said he, con-
 cluding his Discourse) Thus is PHILO-
 SOPHY establish'd. For Every-one, of
 necessity, must reason concerning his own
 Happiness; "What his Good is, and what
 his Ill." The Question is only, "Who
 reasons best?" For even He who re-
 jects this *reasoning* or *deliberating* Part,
 does it from a *certain Reason*, and from a
 Persuasion "That this is best."

BY



BY this time we found our-selves in-sensibly got home. Our *Philosophy* ended, and we return'd to the common Affairs of Life.

The End of the Second Volume

200
100
50

THE H. A. F. B. B. B.

It is the duty of the
State to protect the
people from the
effects of the
common law.

THE H. A. F. B. B. B.

THE H. A. F. B. B. B.



